

## *A Harmony of the Synoptic Gospels*

### *Introduction*

A *harmony* of the Synoptic Gospels is a reconciliation of all the accounts written in the gospels in an attempt to reconcile *when*, *where*, and *how* they occurred and *what was said* on each occasion. Scholars differ from one another in harmonizing the Synoptics; hence, this is only an *attempt*—a harmony, not *the* harmony. In my textbook, *The Synoptic Gospels*, I have attempted to the best of my ability to put the events and discourses (great or small) in chronological order through careful observation of the text and by drawing upon the work of several commentators. In this harmony, I have only included events and discourses in the life of Christ which are *duplicated in more than one gospel account*. If the event or discourse is found in only *one* gospel, the student can simply refer to his own Bible. The exception to this rule is found in the events surrounding the crucifixion, death, and resurrection of Christ which are so condensed that I decided to include information found in only one account. Hopefully, this harmony will help the student study through the textbook without having to constantly flip through his Bible to find the relevant verses being discussed. As he studies the textbook, he can then have all the Biblical texts in front of him for constant referral. After all, the most important thing to study is the Scriptural texts themselves. Throughout this harmony, I have used the 1995 edition of the New American Standard Bible.

### *II. The Birth of John the Baptist and the Announcement of Christ's Birth—Lk. 1: 5-80; Matt. 1: 18-25*

#### *Lk. 1: 5-80*

In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there was a priest named Zacharias, of the division of Abijah; and he had a wife from the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.<sup>6</sup> They were both righteous in the sight of God, walking blamelessly in all the commandments and requirements of the Lord.<sup>7</sup> But they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and they were both advanced in years.<sup>8</sup> Now it happened *that* while he was performing his priestly service before God in the *appointed* order of his division,<sup>9</sup> according to the custom of the priestly office, he was chosen by lot to enter the temple of the Lord and burn incense.<sup>10</sup> And the whole multitude of the people were in prayer outside at the hour of the incense offering.<sup>11</sup> And an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing to the right of the altar of incense.<sup>12</sup> Zacharias was troubled when he saw *the angel*, and fear gripped him.<sup>13</sup> But the angel said to him, "Do not be afraid, Zacharias, for your petition has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you will give him the name John."<sup>14</sup> "You will have joy and gladness, and many will rejoice at his birth."<sup>15</sup> "For he will be great in the sight of the Lord; and he will drink no wine or liquor, and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit while yet in his mother's womb."<sup>16</sup> "And he will turn many of the sons of Israel back to the Lord their God."<sup>17</sup> "It is he who will go *as a forerunner* before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah, TO TURN THE HEARTS OF THE FATHERS BACK TO THE CHILDREN, and the disobedient to the attitude of the righteous, so as to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."<sup>18</sup> Zacharias said to the angel, "How will I know this *for certain*? For I am an old man and my wife is advanced in years."<sup>19</sup> The angel answered and said to him, "I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring you this good news."<sup>20</sup> "And behold, you shall be silent and unable to speak until the day when these things take place, because you did not believe my words, which will be fulfilled in their proper time."<sup>21</sup> The people were waiting for Zacharias, and were wondering at his delay in the temple.<sup>22</sup> But

when he came out, he was unable to speak to them; and they realized that he had seen a vision in the temple; and he kept making signs to them, and remained mute.<sup>23</sup> When the days of his priestly service were ended, he went back home.<sup>24</sup> After these days Elizabeth his wife became pregnant, and she kept herself in seclusion for five months, saying,<sup>25</sup> "This is the way the Lord has dealt with me in the days when He looked *with favor* upon *me*, to take away my disgrace among men."<sup>26</sup> Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city in Galilee called Nazareth,<sup>27</sup> to a virgin engaged to a man whose name was Joseph, of the descendants of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.<sup>28</sup> And coming in, he said to her, "Greetings, favored one! The Lord *is* with you."<sup>29</sup> But she was very perplexed at *this* statement, and kept pondering what kind of salutation this was.<sup>30</sup> The angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary; for you have found favor with God.<sup>31</sup> "And behold, you will conceive in your womb and bear a son, and you shall name Him Jesus.<sup>32</sup> "He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High; and the Lord God will give Him the throne of His father David;<sup>33</sup> and He will reign over the house of Jacob forever, and His kingdom will have no end."<sup>34</sup> Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?"<sup>35</sup> The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God.<sup>36</sup> "And behold, even your relative Elizabeth has also conceived a son in her old age; and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month.<sup>37</sup> "For nothing will be impossible with God."<sup>38</sup> And Mary said, "Behold, the bondservant of the Lord; may it be done to me according to your word." And the angel departed from her.<sup>39</sup> Now at this time Mary arose and went in a hurry to the hill country, to a city of Judah,<sup>40</sup> and entered the house of Zacharias and greeted Elizabeth.<sup>41</sup> When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the baby leaped in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit.<sup>42</sup> And she cried out with a loud voice and said, "Blessed *are* you among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of your womb!<sup>43</sup> "And how has it *happened* to me, that the mother of my Lord would come to me?<sup>44</sup> "For behold, when the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby leaped in my womb for joy.<sup>45</sup> "And blessed *is* she who believed that there would be a fulfillment of what had been spoken to her by the Lord."<sup>46</sup> And Mary said: "My soul exalts the Lord,<sup>47</sup> And my spirit has rejoiced in God my Savior.<sup>48</sup> "For He has had regard for the humble state of His bondservant; For behold, from this time on all generations will count me blessed.<sup>49</sup> "For the Mighty One has done great things for me; And holy is His name.<sup>50</sup> "AND HIS MERCY IS UPON GENERATION AFTER GENERATION TOWARD THOSE WHO FEAR HIM.<sup>51</sup> "He has done mighty deeds with His arm; He has scattered *those who were* proud in the thoughts of their heart.<sup>52</sup> "He has brought down rulers from *their* thrones, And has exalted those who were humble.<sup>53</sup> "HE HAS FILLED THE HUNGRY WITH GOOD THINGS; And sent away the rich empty-handed.<sup>54</sup> "He has given help to Israel His servant, In remembrance of His mercy,<sup>55</sup> As He spoke to our fathers, To Abraham and his descendants forever."<sup>56</sup> And Mary stayed with her about three months, and *then* returned to her home.<sup>57</sup> Now the time had come for Elizabeth to give birth, and she gave birth to a son.<sup>58</sup> Her neighbors and her relatives heard that the Lord had displayed His great mercy toward her; and they were rejoicing with her.<sup>59</sup> And it happened that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child, and they were going to call him Zacharias, after his father.<sup>60</sup> But his mother answered and said, "No indeed; but he shall be called John."<sup>61</sup> And they said to her, "There is no one among your relatives who is called by that name."<sup>62</sup> And they made signs to his father, as to what he wanted him called.<sup>63</sup> And he asked for a tablet and wrote as follows, "His name is John." And they were all astonished.<sup>64</sup> And at once his mouth was opened and his tongue *loosed*, and he *began* to speak in praise of God.<sup>65</sup> Fear came on all those living around them; and all these matters were being talked about in all the hill country of Judea.<sup>66</sup> All who heard them kept them in mind, saying, "What then will this child *turn out to be*?" For the hand of the Lord was certainly with him.<sup>67</sup> And his father

Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying: <sup>68</sup> "Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel, For He has visited us and accomplished redemption for His people, <sup>69</sup> And has raised up a horn of salvation for us In the house of David His servant-- <sup>70</sup> As He spoke by the mouth of His holy prophets from of old-- <sup>71</sup> Salvation FROM OUR ENEMIES, And FROM THE HAND OF ALL WHO HATE US; <sup>72</sup> To show mercy toward our fathers, And to remember His holy covenant, <sup>73</sup> The oath which He swore to Abraham our father, <sup>74</sup> To grant us that we, being rescued from the hand of our enemies, Might serve Him without fear, <sup>75</sup> In holiness and righteousness before Him all our days. <sup>76</sup> "And you, child, will be called the prophet of the Most High; For you will go on BEFORE THE LORD TO PREPARE HIS WAYS; <sup>77</sup> To give to His people *the* knowledge of salvation By the forgiveness of their sins, <sup>78</sup> Because of the tender mercy of our God, With which the Sunrise from on high will visit us, <sup>79</sup> TO SHINE UPON THOSE WHO SIT IN DARKNESS AND THE SHADOW OF DEATH, To guide our feet into the way of peace." <sup>80</sup> And the child continued to grow and to become strong in spirit, and he lived in the deserts until the day of his public appearance to Israel. (Luke 1:5-80 NASB)

***Matt. 1: 18-25***

Now the birth of Jesus Christ was as follows: when His mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found to be with child by the Holy Spirit. <sup>19</sup> And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man and not wanting to disgrace her, planned to send her away secretly. <sup>20</sup> But when he had considered this, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, "Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary as your wife; for the Child who has been conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. <sup>21</sup> "She will bear a Son; and you shall call His name Jesus, for He will save His people from their sins." <sup>22</sup> Now all this took place to fulfill what was spoken by the Lord through the prophet: <sup>23</sup> "BEHOLD, THE VIRGIN SHALL BE WITH CHILD AND SHALL BEAR A SON, AND THEY SHALL CALL HIS NAME IMMANUEL," which translated means, "GOD WITH US." <sup>24</sup> And Joseph awoke from his sleep and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took *Mary* as his wife, <sup>25</sup> but kept her a virgin until she gave birth to a Son; and he called His name Jesus. (Matthew 1:18-25 NASB)

***IV. The Visit of the Magi and Satan's Attempt to Destroy the Christ—Matt. 2: 1-23; Luke 2: 39***

***Matt. 2: 1-23***

Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, magi from the east arrived in Jerusalem, saying, <sup>2</sup> "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we saw His star in the east and have come to worship Him." <sup>3</sup> When Herod the king heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. <sup>4</sup> Gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Messiah was to be born. <sup>5</sup> They said to him, "In Bethlehem of Judea; for this is what has been written by the prophet: <sup>6</sup> 'AND YOU, BETHLEHEM, LAND OF JUDAH, ARE BY NO MEANS LEAST AMONG THE LEADERS OF JUDAH; FOR OUT OF YOU SHALL COME FORTH A RULER WHO WILL SHEPHERD MY PEOPLE ISRAEL.'" <sup>7</sup> Then Herod secretly called the magi and determined from them the exact time the star appeared. <sup>8</sup> And he sent them to Bethlehem and said, "Go and search carefully for the Child; and when you have found *Him*, report to me, so that I too may come and worship Him." <sup>9</sup> After hearing the king, they went their way; and the star, which they had seen in the east, went on before them until it came and stood over *the place* where the Child was. <sup>10</sup> When they saw the star, they rejoiced exceedingly with great joy. <sup>11</sup> After coming into the house they saw the Child with Mary His mother; and they fell to the ground and worshiped Him. Then, opening their treasures, they presented to Him gifts of gold, frankincense,

and myrrh. <sup>12</sup> And having been warned *by God* in a dream not to return to Herod, the magi left for their own country by another way. <sup>13</sup> Now when they had gone, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream and said, "Get up! Take the Child and His mother and flee to Egypt, and remain there until I tell you; for Herod is going to search for the Child to destroy Him." <sup>14</sup> So Joseph got up and took the Child and His mother while it was still night, and left for Egypt. <sup>15</sup> He remained there until the death of Herod. *This was* to fulfill what had been spoken by the Lord through the prophet: "OUT OF EGYPT I CALLED MY SON." <sup>16</sup> Then when Herod saw that he had been tricked by the magi, he became very enraged, and sent and slew all the male children who were in Bethlehem and all its vicinity, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had determined from the magi. <sup>17</sup> Then what had been spoken through Jeremiah the prophet was fulfilled: <sup>18</sup> "A VOICE WAS HEARD IN RAMAH, WEEPING AND GREAT MOURNING, RACHEL WEEPING FOR HER CHILDREN; AND SHE REFUSED TO BE COMFORTED, BECAUSE THEY WERE NO MORE." <sup>19</sup> But when Herod died, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said, <sup>20</sup> "Get up, take the Child and His mother, and go into the land of Israel; for those who sought the Child's life are dead." <sup>21</sup> So Joseph got up, took the Child and His mother, and came into the land of Israel. <sup>22</sup> But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judea in place of his father Herod, he was afraid to go there. Then after being warned *by God* in a dream, he left for the regions of Galilee, <sup>23</sup> and came and lived in a city called Nazareth. *This was* to fulfill what was spoken through the prophets: "He shall be called a Nazarene." (Matthew 2:1-23 NASB)

### ***Luke 2: 39***

When they had performed everything according to the Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their own city of Nazareth. (Luke 2:39 NASB)

## ***VI. The Ministry of John the Baptist—Matt. 3: 1-12; Mk. 1: 1-8; Lk. 3: 1-20***

### ***Matt. 3: 1-12***

Now in those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying, <sup>2</sup> "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." <sup>3</sup> For this is the one referred to by Isaiah the prophet when he said, "THE VOICE OF ONE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS, 'MAKE READY THE WAY OF THE LORD, MAKE HIS PATHS STRAIGHT!'" <sup>4</sup> Now John himself had a garment of camel's hair and a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey. <sup>5</sup> Then Jerusalem was going out to him, and all Judea and all the district around the Jordan; <sup>6</sup> and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed their sins. <sup>7</sup> But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?" <sup>8</sup> "Therefore bear fruit in keeping with repentance; <sup>9</sup> and do not suppose that you can say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham for our father'; for I say to you that from these stones God is able to raise up children to Abraham. <sup>10</sup> "The axe is already laid at the root of the trees; therefore every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. <sup>11</sup> "As for me, I baptize you with water for repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, and I am not fit to remove His sandals; He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. <sup>12</sup> "His winnowing fork is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clear His threshing floor; and He will gather His wheat into the barn, but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." (Matthew 3:1-12 NASB)

### ***Mk. 1: 1-8***

The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. <sup>2</sup> As it is written in Isaiah the prophet: "BEHOLD, I SEND MY MESSENGER AHEAD OF YOU, WHO WILL PREPARE YOUR WAY; <sup>3</sup> THE VOICE OF ONE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS, 'MAKE READY THE WAY OF THE

LORD, MAKE HIS PATHS STRAIGHT.'" <sup>4</sup> John the Baptist appeared in the wilderness preaching a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. <sup>5</sup> And all the country of Judea was going out to him, and all the people of Jerusalem; and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, confessing their sins. <sup>6</sup> John was clothed with camel's hair and wore a leather belt around his waist, and his diet was locusts and wild honey. <sup>7</sup> And he was preaching, and saying, "After me One is coming who is mightier than I, and I am not fit to stoop down and untie the thong of His sandals. <sup>8</sup> "I baptized you with water; but He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit." (Mark 1:1-8 NASB)

### ***Lk. 3: 1-20***

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judea, and Herod was tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip was tetrarch of the region of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias was tetrarch of Abilene, <sup>2</sup> in the high priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came to John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness. <sup>3</sup> And he came into all the district around the Jordan, preaching a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins; <sup>4</sup> as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, "THE VOICE OF ONE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS, 'MAKE READY THE WAY OF THE LORD, MAKE HIS PATHS STRAIGHT. <sup>5</sup> 'EVERY RAVINE WILL BE FILLED, AND EVERY MOUNTAIN AND HILL WILL BE BROUGHT LOW; THE CROOKED WILL BECOME STRAIGHT, AND THE ROUGH ROADS SMOOTH; <sup>6</sup> AND ALL FLESH WILL SEE THE SALVATION OF GOD.'" <sup>7</sup> So he began saying to the crowds who were going out to be baptized by him, "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup> "Therefore bear fruits in keeping with repentance, and do not begin to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham for our father,' for I say to you that from these stones God is able to raise up children to Abraham. <sup>9</sup> "Indeed the axe is already laid at the root of the trees; so every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire." <sup>10</sup> And the crowds were questioning him, saying, "Then what shall we do?" <sup>11</sup> And he would answer and say to them, "The man who has two tunics is to share with him who has none; and he who has food is to do likewise." <sup>12</sup> And some tax collectors also came to be baptized, and they said to him, "Teacher, what shall we do?" <sup>13</sup> And he said to them, "Collect no more than what you have been ordered to." <sup>14</sup> Some soldiers were questioning him, saying, "And what about us, what shall we do?" And he said to them, "Do not take money from anyone by force, or accuse anyone falsely, and be content with your wages." <sup>15</sup> Now while the people were in a state of expectation and all were wondering in their hearts about John, as to whether he was the Christ, <sup>16</sup> John answered and said to them all, "As for me, I baptize you with water; but One is coming who is mightier than I, and I am not fit to untie the thong of His sandals; He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. <sup>17</sup> "His winnowing fork is in His hand to thoroughly clear His threshing floor, and to gather the wheat into His barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." <sup>18</sup> So with many other exhortations he preached the gospel to the people. <sup>19</sup> But when Herod the tetrarch was reprimanded by him because of Herodias, his brother's wife, and because of all the wicked things which Herod had done, <sup>20</sup> Herod also added this to them all: he locked John up in prison. (Luke 3:1-20 NASB)

## ***VII. The Year of Inauguration***

### ***A. The Baptism of Jesus—Matt. 3: 13-17; Mk. 1: 9-11; Lk. 3: 21-22***

#### ***Matt. 3: 13-17***

Then Jesus arrived from Galilee at the Jordan coming to John, to be baptized by him. <sup>14</sup> But John tried to prevent Him, saying, "I have need to be baptized by You, and do You come to me?" <sup>15</sup> But Jesus answering said to him, "Permit it at this time; for in this way it is fitting for us to fulfill all

righteousness." Then he permitted Him.<sup>16</sup> After being baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove *and* lighting on Him,<sup>17</sup> and behold, a voice out of the heavens said, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased." (Matthew 3:13-17 NASB)

***Mk. 1: 9-11***

In those days Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee and was baptized by John in the Jordan.<sup>10</sup> Immediately coming up out of the water, He saw the heavens opening, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon Him;<sup>11</sup> and a voice came out of the heavens: "You are My beloved Son, in You I am well-pleased." (Mark 1:9-11 NASB)

***Lk. 3: 21-22***

Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus was also baptized, and while He was praying, heaven was opened,<sup>22</sup> and the Holy Spirit descended upon Him in bodily form like a dove, and a voice came out of heaven, "You are My beloved Son, in You I am well-pleased." (Luke 3:21-22 NASB)

***B. The Temptation of Jesus—Matt. 4: 1-11; Mk. 1: 12-13; Lk. 4: 1-13***

***Matt. 4: 1-11***

Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.<sup>2</sup> And after He had fasted forty days and forty nights, He then became hungry.<sup>3</sup> And the tempter came and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread."<sup>4</sup> But He answered and said, "It is written, 'MAN SHALL NOT LIVE ON BREAD ALONE, BUT ON EVERY WORD THAT PROCEEDS OUT OF THE MOUTH OF GOD.'"<sup>5</sup> Then the devil took Him into the holy city and had Him stand on the pinnacle of the temple,<sup>6</sup> and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down; for it is written, 'HE WILL COMMAND HIS ANGELS CONCERNING YOU'; and 'ON *their* HANDS THEY WILL BEAR YOU UP, SO THAT YOU WILL NOT STRIKE YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE.'"<sup>7</sup> Jesus said to him, "On the other hand, it is written, 'YOU SHALL NOT PUT THE LORD YOUR GOD TO THE TEST.'"<sup>8</sup> Again, the devil took Him to a very high mountain and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory;<sup>9</sup> and he said to Him, "All these things I will give You, if You fall down and worship me."<sup>10</sup> Then Jesus said to him, "Go, Satan! For it is written, 'YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD, AND SERVE HIM ONLY.'"<sup>11</sup> Then the devil left Him; and behold, angels came and *began* to minister to Him. (Matthew 4:1-11 NASB)

***Mk. 1: 12-13***

Immediately the Spirit impelled Him *to go* out into the wilderness.<sup>13</sup> And He was in the wilderness forty days being tempted by Satan; and He was with the wild beasts, and the angels were ministering to Him. (Mark 1:12-13 NASB)

***Lk. 4: 1-13***

Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led around by the Spirit in the wilderness<sup>2</sup> for forty days, being tempted by the devil. And He ate nothing during those days, and when they had ended, He became hungry.<sup>3</sup> And the devil said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, tell this stone to become bread."<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered him, "It is written, 'MAN SHALL NOT LIVE ON BREAD ALONE.'"<sup>5</sup> And he led Him up and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world in a

moment of time. <sup>6</sup> And the devil said to Him, "I will give You all this domain and its glory; for it has been handed over to me, and I give it to whomever I wish. <sup>7</sup> "Therefore if You worship before me, it shall all be Yours." <sup>8</sup> Jesus answered him, "It is written, 'YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD AND SERVE HIM ONLY.'" <sup>9</sup> And he led Him to Jerusalem and had Him stand on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down from here; <sup>10</sup> for it is written, 'HE WILL COMMAND HIS ANGELS CONCERNING YOU TO GUARD YOU,' <sup>11</sup> and, 'ON *their* HANDS THEY WILL BEAR YOU UP, SO THAT YOU WILL NOT STRIKE YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE.'" <sup>12</sup> And Jesus answered and said to him, "It is said, 'YOU SHALL NOT PUT THE LORD YOUR GOD TO THE TEST.'" <sup>13</sup> When the devil had finished every temptation, he left Him until an opportune time. (Luke 4:1-13 NASB)

### ***VIII. The Year of Popularity—The Early Galilean Ministry***

#### ***A. The Beginning of the Galilean Ministry—Matt. 4: 12-25; Mk. 1: 14-15; Lk. 4: 14-15; Jn. 4: 43-54***

##### ***Matthew 4: 12-25***

<sup>12</sup>Now when Jesus heard that John had been taken into custody, He withdrew into Galilee; <sup>13</sup> and leaving Nazareth, He came and settled in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the region of Zebulun and Naphtali. <sup>14</sup> *This was* to fulfill what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet: <sup>15</sup> "THE LAND OF ZEBULUN AND THE LAND OF NAPHTALI, BY THE WAY OF THE SEA, BEYOND THE JORDAN, GALILEE OF THE GENTILES-- <sup>16</sup> "THE PEOPLE WHO WERE SITTING IN DARKNESS SAW A GREAT LIGHT, AND THOSE WHO WERE SITTING IN THE LAND AND SHADOW OF DEATH, UPON THEM A LIGHT DAWNED." <sup>17</sup> From that time Jesus began to preach and say, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." <sup>18</sup> Now as Jesus was walking by the Sea of Galilee, He saw two brothers, Simon who was called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. <sup>19</sup> And He said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men." <sup>20</sup> Immediately they left their nets and followed Him. <sup>21</sup> Going on from there He saw two other brothers, James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and He called them. <sup>22</sup> Immediately they left the boat and their father, and followed Him. <sup>23</sup> Jesus was going throughout all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues and proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the people. <sup>24</sup> The news about Him spread throughout all Syria; and they brought to Him all who were ill, those suffering with various diseases and pains, demoniacs, epileptics, paralytics; and He healed them. <sup>25</sup> Large crowds followed Him from Galilee and *the* Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judea and *from* beyond the Jordan. (Matthew 4:12-25 NASB)

##### ***Mark 1: 14-15***

<sup>14</sup>Now after John had been taken into custody, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of God, <sup>15</sup> and saying, "The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent and believe in the gospel." (Mark 1:14-15 NASB)

##### ***Luke 4: 14-15***

<sup>14</sup>And Jesus returned to Galilee in the power of the Spirit, and news about Him spread through all the surrounding district. <sup>15</sup> And He *began* teaching in their synagogues and was praised by all. (Luke 4:14-15 NASB)

***Jn. 4: 43-54***

<sup>43</sup>After the two days He went forth from there into Galilee. <sup>44</sup>For Jesus Himself testified that a prophet has no honor in his own country. <sup>45</sup>So when He came to Galilee, the Galileans received Him, having seen all the things that He did in Jerusalem at the feast; for they themselves also went to the feast. <sup>46</sup>Therefore He came again to Cana of Galilee where He had made the water wine. And there was a royal official whose son was sick at Capernaum. <sup>47</sup>When he heard that Jesus had come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to Him and was imploring *Him* to come down and heal his son; for he was at the point of death. <sup>48</sup>So Jesus said to him, "Unless you *people* see signs and wonders, you *simply* will not believe." <sup>49</sup>The royal official said to Him, "Sir, come down before my child dies." <sup>50</sup>Jesus said to him, "Go; your son lives." The man believed the word that Jesus spoke to him and started off. <sup>51</sup>As he was now going down, *his* slaves met him, saying that his son was living. <sup>52</sup>So he inquired of them the hour when he began to get better. Then they said to him, "Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him." <sup>53</sup>So the father knew that *it was* at that hour in which Jesus said to him, "Your son lives"; and he himself believed and his whole household. <sup>54</sup>This is again a second sign that Jesus performed when He had come out of Judea into Galilee. (John 4:43-54 NASB)

***B. The Calling of the First Disciples—Matt. 4: 18-22; Mk. 1: 16-20; Lk. 5: 1-11***

***Matt. 4: 18-22***

<sup>18</sup>Now as Jesus was walking by the Sea of Galilee, He saw two brothers, Simon who was called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. <sup>19</sup>And He said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men." <sup>20</sup>Immediately they left their nets and followed Him. <sup>21</sup>Going on from there He saw two other brothers, James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and He called them. <sup>22</sup>Immediately they left the boat and their father, and followed Him. (Matthew 4:18-22 NASB)

***Mk. 1: 16-20***

<sup>16</sup>As He was going along by the Sea of Galilee, He saw Simon and Andrew, the brother of Simon, casting a net in the sea; for they were fishermen. <sup>17</sup>And Jesus said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you become fishers of men." <sup>18</sup>Immediately they left their nets and followed Him. <sup>19</sup>Going on a little farther, He saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who were also in the boat mending the nets. <sup>20</sup>Immediately He called them; and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went away to follow Him. (Mark 1:16-20 NASB)

***Lk. 5: 1-11***

<sup>1</sup>Now it happened that while the crowd was pressing around Him and listening to the word of God, He was standing by the lake of Gennesaret; <sup>2</sup>and He saw two boats lying at the edge of the lake; but the fishermen had gotten out of them and were washing their nets. <sup>3</sup>And He got into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little way from the land. And He sat down and *began* teaching the people from the boat. <sup>4</sup>When He had finished speaking, He said to Simon, "Put out into the deep water and let down your nets for a catch." <sup>5</sup>Simon answered and said, "Master, we worked hard all night and caught nothing, but I will do as You say *and* let down the nets." <sup>6</sup>When they had done this, they enclosed a great quantity of fish, and their nets *began* to break; <sup>7</sup>so they signaled to their partners in the other boat for them to come and help them. And they came and filled both of the boats, so that they began to sink. <sup>8</sup>But when Simon Peter saw *that*, he fell down at Jesus' feet, saying, "Go away from me Lord, for I am a sinful man, O Lord!" <sup>9</sup>For amazement had seized him and all his



companions because of the catch of fish which they had taken;<sup>10</sup> and so also *were* James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said to Simon, "Do not fear, from now on you will be catching men."<sup>11</sup> When they had brought their boats to land, they left everything and followed Him. (Luke 5:1-11 NASB)

***C. Miracles in Capernaum: The Healing of the Demoniac in the Synagogue, Peter's Mother-in-Law, and Other Sick and Demon-Possessed— Matt. 4: 23-25; 8: 14-17; Mk. 1: 21-39 Lk. 4: 31-44***

***1. Healing the Demoniac—Mk. 1: 21-29; Lk. 4: 31-37***

***Mk. 1: 21-29***

<sup>21</sup>They went into Capernaum; and immediately on the Sabbath He entered the synagogue and *began* to teach. <sup>22</sup>They were amazed at His teaching; for He was teaching them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes. <sup>23</sup>Just then there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit; and he cried out, <sup>24</sup>saying, "What business do we have with each other, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? I know who You are-- the Holy One of God!" <sup>25</sup>And Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet, and come out of him!" <sup>26</sup>Throwing him into convulsions, the unclean spirit cried out with a loud voice and came out of him. <sup>27</sup>They were all amazed, so that they debated among themselves, saying, "What is this? A new teaching with authority! He commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey Him." <sup>28</sup>Immediately the news about Him spread everywhere into all the surrounding district of Galilee. <sup>29</sup>And immediately after they came out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. (Mark 1: 21-29)

***Lk. 4: 31-37***

<sup>31</sup>And He came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and He was teaching them on the Sabbath;<sup>32</sup> and they were amazed at His teaching, for His message was with authority.<sup>33</sup> In the synagogue there was a man possessed by the spirit of an unclean demon, and he cried out with a loud voice,<sup>34</sup> "Let us alone! What business do we have with each other, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? I know who You are-- the Holy One of God!"<sup>35</sup> But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet and come out of him!" And when the demon had thrown him down in the midst *of the people*, he came out of him without doing him any harm.<sup>36</sup> And amazement came upon them all, and they *began* talking with one another saying, "What is this message? For with authority and power He commands the unclean spirits and they come out."<sup>37</sup> And the report about Him was spreading into every locality in the surrounding district. (Luke 4:31-37 NASB)

***2. Healing Peter's Mother-in-Law—Matt. 8: 14-17; Mk. 1: 29b-31; Lk. 4: 38-39***

***Matt. 8: 14-17***

<sup>14</sup>When Jesus came into Peter's home, He saw his mother-in-law lying sick in bed with a fever.<sup>15</sup> He touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she got up and waited on Him.<sup>16</sup> When evening came, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed; and He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were ill.<sup>17</sup> *This was* to fulfill what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet: "HE HIMSELF TOOK OUR INFIRMITIES AND CARRIED AWAY OUR DISEASES." (Matthew 8:14-17 NASB)

**Mk. 1: 29-31**

<sup>29</sup> And immediately after they came out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.<sup>30</sup> Now Simon's mother-in-law was lying sick with a fever; and immediately they spoke to Jesus about her.<sup>31</sup> And He came to her and raised her up, taking her by the hand, and the fever left her, and she waited on them. (Mk. 1: 29-31 NASB)

**Lk. 4: 38-39**

<sup>38</sup> Then He got up and *left* the synagogue, and entered Simon's home. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever, and they asked Him to help her.<sup>39</sup> And standing over her, He rebuked the fever, and it left her; and she immediately got up and waited on them. (Luke 4: 38-39 NASB).

**3. Healing the masses— Matt. 4: 23-25; Mk.1: 32-34; Lk. 4: 40-44**

**Matt. 4: 23-25)**

<sup>23</sup> Jesus was going throughout all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues and proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the people.<sup>24</sup> The news about Him spread throughout all Syria; and they brought to Him all who were ill, those suffering with various diseases and pains, demoniacs, epileptics, paralytics; and He healed them.<sup>25</sup> Large crowds followed Him from Galilee and *the* Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judea and *from* beyond the Jordan. (Matthew 4:23-25 NASB)

**Mk.1: 32-34**

<sup>32</sup> When evening came, after the sun had set, they *began* bringing to Him all who were ill and those who were demon-possessed.<sup>33</sup> And the whole city had gathered at the door.<sup>34</sup> And He healed many who were ill with various diseases, and cast out many demons; and He was not permitting the demons to speak, because they knew who He was. (Mark 1: 32-34 NASB)

**Lk. 4: 40-41**

<sup>40</sup> While the sun was setting, all those who had any *who were* sick with various diseases brought them to Him; and laying His hands on each one of them, He was healing them.<sup>41</sup> Demons also were coming out of many, shouting, "You are the Son of God!" But rebuking them, He would not allow them to speak, because they knew Him to be the Christ. (Lk. 4: 40-41 NASB)

**4. Rest followed by Continued Ministry in Other Cities in Galilee—Mark 1:35-39; Luke 4:42-44**

**Mark 1:35-39**

<sup>35</sup> In the early morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left *the house*, and went away to a secluded place, and was praying there.<sup>36</sup> Simon and his companions searched for Him;<sup>37</sup> they found Him, and said to Him, "Everyone is looking for You."<sup>38</sup> He said to them, "Let us go somewhere else to the towns nearby, so that I may preach there also; for that is what I came for."<sup>39</sup> And He went into their synagogues throughout all Galilee, preaching and casting out the demons. (Mark 1:35-39 NASB)

**Luke 4:42-44**

<sup>42</sup> When day came, Jesus left and went to a secluded place; and the crowds were searching for Him, and came to Him and tried to keep Him from going away from them.<sup>43</sup> But He said to them, "I must

preach the kingdom of God to the other cities also, for I was sent for this purpose." <sup>44</sup> So He kept on preaching in the synagogues of Judea. (Luke 4:42-44 NASB)

***D. The Healing of the Leper—Matt. 8: 2-4; Mk. 1: 40-45; Lk. 5: 12-16***

***Matt. 8: 2-4***

And a leper came to Him and bowed down before Him, and said, "Lord, if You are willing, You can make me clean." <sup>3</sup> Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, "I am willing; be cleansed." And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. <sup>4</sup> And Jesus said to him, "See that you tell no one; but go, show yourself to the priest and present the offering that Moses commanded, as a testimony to them." (Matthew 8:2-4 NASB)

***Mk. 1: 40-45***

And a leper came to Jesus, beseeching Him and falling on his knees before Him, and saying, "If You are willing, You can make me clean." <sup>41</sup> Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, and said to him, "I am willing; be cleansed." <sup>42</sup> Immediately the leprosy left him and he was cleansed. <sup>43</sup> And He sternly warned him and immediately sent him away, <sup>44</sup> and He said to him, "See that you say nothing to anyone; but go, show yourself to the priest and offer for your cleansing what Moses commanded, as a testimony to them." <sup>45</sup> But he went out and began to proclaim it freely and to spread the news around, to such an extent that Jesus could no longer publicly enter a city, but stayed out in unpopulated areas; and they were coming to Him from everywhere. (Mark 1:40-45 NASB)

***Lk. 5: 12-16***

While He was in one of the cities, behold, *there was* a man covered with leprosy; and when he saw Jesus, he fell on his face and implored Him, saying, "Lord, if You are willing, You can make me clean." <sup>13</sup> And He stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, "I am willing; be cleansed." And immediately the leprosy left him. <sup>14</sup> And He ordered him to tell no one, "But go and show yourself to the priest and make an offering for your cleansing, just as Moses commanded, as a testimony to them." <sup>15</sup> But the news about Him was spreading even farther, and large crowds were gathering to hear *Him* and to be healed of their sicknesses. <sup>16</sup> But Jesus Himself would *often* slip away to the wilderness and pray. (Luke 5:12-16 NASB)

***E. The Healing of the Paralytic—Matt. 9: 2-8; Mk. 2: 1-12; Lk. 5: 17-26***

***Matt. 9: 2-8***

And they brought to Him a paralytic lying on a bed. Seeing their faith, Jesus said to the paralytic, "Take courage, son; your sins are forgiven." <sup>3</sup> And some of the scribes said to themselves, "This *fellow* blasphemes." <sup>4</sup> And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, "Why are you thinking evil in your hearts?" <sup>5</sup> "Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Get up, and walk '?" <sup>6</sup> "But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins "-- then He said to the paralytic, "Get up, pick up your bed and go home." <sup>7</sup> And he got up and went home. <sup>8</sup> But when the crowds saw *this*, they were awestruck, and glorified God, who had given such authority to men. (Matthew 9:2-8 NASB)

***Mk. 2: 1-12***

When He had come back to Capernaum several days afterward, it was heard that He was at home. <sup>2</sup> And many were gathered together, so that there was no longer room, not even near the door; and He

was speaking the word to them.<sup>3</sup> And they came, bringing to Him a paralytic, carried by four men.<sup>4</sup> Being unable to get to Him because of the crowd, they removed the roof above Him; and when they had dug an opening, they let down the pallet on which the paralytic was lying.<sup>5</sup> And Jesus seeing their faith said to the paralytic, "Son, your sins are forgiven."<sup>6</sup> But some of the scribes were sitting there and reasoning in their hearts,<sup>7</sup> "Why does this man speak that way? He is blaspheming; who can forgive sins but God alone?"<sup>8</sup> Immediately Jesus, aware in His spirit that they were reasoning that way within themselves, said to them, "Why are you reasoning about these things in your hearts?<sup>9</sup> "Which is easier, to say to the paralytic, 'Your sins are forgiven'; or to say, 'Get up, and pick up your pallet and walk '?"<sup>10</sup> "But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins "-- He said to the paralytic,<sup>11</sup> "I say to you, get up, pick up your pallet and go home."<sup>12</sup> And he got up and immediately picked up the pallet and went out in the sight of everyone, so that they were all amazed and were glorifying God, saying, "We have never seen anything like this." (Mark 2:1-12 NASB)

***Lk. 5: 17-26***

One day He was teaching; and there were *some* Pharisees and teachers of the law sitting *there*, who had come from every village of Galilee and Judea and *from* Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was *present* for Him to perform healing.<sup>18</sup> And *some* men *were* carrying on a bed a man who was paralyzed; and they were trying to bring him in and to set him down in front of Him.<sup>19</sup> But not finding any *way* to bring him in because of the crowd, they went up on the roof and let him down through the tiles with his stretcher, into the middle *of the crowd*, in front of Jesus.<sup>20</sup> Seeing their faith, He said, "Friend, your sins are forgiven you."<sup>21</sup> The scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, "Who is this *man* who speaks blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?"<sup>22</sup> But Jesus, aware of their reasonings, answered and said to them, "Why are you reasoning in your hearts?<sup>23</sup> "Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins have been forgiven you,' or to say, 'Get up and walk '?"<sup>24</sup> "But, so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins,"-- He said to the paralytic-- "I say to you, get up, and pick up your stretcher and go home."<sup>25</sup> Immediately he got up before them, and picked up what he had been lying on, and went home glorifying God.<sup>26</sup> They were all struck with astonishment and *began* glorifying God; and they were filled with fear, saying, "We have seen remarkable things today." (Luke 5:17-26 NASB)

***F. The Calling of Matthew—Matt. 9:9; Mk. 2: 14; Lk. 5: 27-28***

***Matt. 9:9***

As Jesus went on from there, He saw a man called Matthew, sitting in the tax collector's booth; and He said to him, "Follow Me!" And he got up and followed Him. (Matthew 9:9 NASB)

***Mk. 2: 14***

As He passed by, He saw Levi the *son* of Alphaeus sitting in the tax booth, and He said to him, "Follow Me!" And he got up and followed Him. (Mark 2:14 NASB)

***Lk. 5: 27-28***

After that He went out and noticed a tax collector named Levi sitting in the tax booth, and He said to him, "Follow Me."<sup>28</sup> And he left everything behind, and got up and *began* to follow Him. (Luke 5:27-28 NASB)

**G. Early Sabbath Controversies—Matt. 12: 1-21; Mk. 2: 23-3: 6; Lk. 6: 1-11**

**1. Disciples in the Grainfields—Matt. 12: 1-8; Mk. 2: 23-28; Lk. 6: 1-5**

**Matt. 12: 1-8**

At that time Jesus went through the grainfields on the Sabbath, and His disciples became hungry and began to pick the heads *of grain* and eat.<sup>2</sup> But when the Pharisees saw *this*, they said to Him, "Look, Your disciples do what is not lawful to do on a Sabbath."<sup>3</sup> But He said to them, "Have you not read what David did when he became hungry, he and his companions,<sup>4</sup> how he entered the house of God, and they ate the consecrated bread, which was not lawful for him to eat nor for those with him, but for the priests alone?<sup>5</sup> "Or have you not read in the Law, that on the Sabbath the priests in the temple break the Sabbath and are innocent?<sup>6</sup> "But I say to you that something greater than the temple is here.<sup>7</sup> "But if you had known what this means, 'I DESIRE COMPASSION, AND NOT A SACRIFICE,' you would not have condemned the innocent.<sup>8</sup> "For the Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath."  
(Matthew 12:1-8 NASB)

**Mk. 2: 23-28**

And it happened that He was passing through the grainfields on the Sabbath, and His disciples began to make their way along while picking the heads *of grain*.<sup>24</sup> The Pharisees were saying to Him, "Look, why are they doing what is not lawful on the Sabbath?"<sup>25</sup> And He said to them, "Have you never read what David did when he was in need and he and his companions became hungry;<sup>26</sup> how he entered the house of God in the time of Abiathar *the* high priest, and ate the consecrated bread, which is not lawful for *anyone* to eat except the priests, and he also gave it to those who were with him?"<sup>27</sup> Jesus said to them, "The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.<sup>28</sup> "So the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath." (Mark 2:23-28 NASB)

**Lk. 6: 1-5**

Now it happened that He was passing through *some* grainfields on a Sabbath; and His disciples were picking the heads of grain, rubbing them in their hands, and eating *the grain*.<sup>2</sup> But some of the Pharisees said, "Why do you do what is not lawful on the Sabbath?"<sup>3</sup> And Jesus answering them said, "Have you not even read what David did when he was hungry, he and those who were with him,<sup>4</sup> how he entered the house of God, and took and ate the consecrated bread which is not lawful for any to eat except the priests alone, and gave it to his companions?"<sup>5</sup> And He was saying to them, "The Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath." (Luke 6:1-5 NASB)

**2. Man with the Withered Hand—Matt. 12: 9-13; Mk. 3: 1-5; Lk. 6: 6-10**

**Matt. 12: 9-13**

Departing from there, He went into their synagogue.<sup>10</sup> And a man *was there* whose hand was withered. And they questioned Jesus, asking, "Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?"-- so that they might accuse Him.<sup>11</sup> And He said to them, "What man is there among you who has a sheep, and if it falls into a pit on the Sabbath, will he not take hold of it and lift it out?<sup>12</sup> "How much more valuable then is a man than a sheep! So then, it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath."<sup>13</sup> Then He said to the man, "Stretch out your hand!" He stretched it out, and it was restored to normal, like the other.  
(Matthew 12:9-13 NASB)

**Mk. 3: 1-5**

He entered again into a synagogue; and a man was there whose hand was withered.<sup>2</sup> They were watching Him *to see* if He would heal him on the Sabbath, so that they might accuse Him.<sup>3</sup> He said to the man with the withered hand, "Get up and come forward!"<sup>4</sup> And He said to them, "Is it lawful to do good or to do harm on the Sabbath, to save a life or to kill?" But they kept silent.<sup>5</sup> After looking around at them with anger, grieved at their hardness of heart, He said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored. (Mark 3:1-5 NASB)

**Lk. 6: 6-10**

On another Sabbath He entered the synagogue and was teaching; and there was a man there whose right hand was withered.<sup>7</sup> The scribes and the Pharisees were watching Him closely *to see* if He healed on the Sabbath, so that they might find *reason* to accuse Him.<sup>8</sup> But He knew what they were thinking, and He said to the man with the withered hand, "Get up and come forward!" And he got up and came forward.<sup>9</sup> And Jesus said to them, "I ask you, is it lawful to do good or to do harm on the Sabbath, to save a life or to destroy it?"<sup>10</sup> After looking around at them all, He said to him, "Stretch out your hand!" And he did *so*; and his hand was restored. (Luke 6:6-10 NASB)

**3. The plot to kill Jesus followed by His withdrawal—Matt. 12: 14-21; Mk. 3: 6-12; Lk. 6: 11**

**Matt. 12: 14-21**

But the Pharisees went out and conspired against Him, *as to* how they might destroy Him.<sup>15</sup> But Jesus, aware of *this*, withdrew from there. Many followed Him, and He healed them all,<sup>16</sup> and warned them not to tell who He was.<sup>17</sup> *This was* to fulfill what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet:<sup>18</sup> "BEHOLD, MY SERVANT WHOM I HAVE CHOSEN; MY BELOVED IN WHOM MY SOUL is WELL-PLEASSED; I WILL PUT MY SPIRIT UPON HIM, AND HE SHALL PROCLAIM JUSTICE TO THE GENTILES.<sup>19</sup> "HE WILL NOT QUARREL, NOR CRY OUT; NOR WILL ANYONE HEAR HIS VOICE IN THE STREETS.<sup>20</sup> "A BATTERED REED HE WILL NOT BREAK OFF, AND A SMOLDERING WICK HE WILL NOT PUT OUT, UNTIL HE LEADS JUSTICE TO VICTORY.<sup>21</sup> "AND IN HIS NAME THE GENTILES WILL HOPE." (Matthew 12:14-21 NASB)

**Mk. 3: 6-12**

The Pharisees went out and immediately *began* conspiring with the Herodians against Him, *as to* how they might destroy Him.<sup>7</sup> Jesus withdrew to the sea with His disciples; and a great multitude from Galilee followed; and *also* from Judea,<sup>8</sup> and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and beyond the Jordan, and the vicinity of Tyre and Sidon, a great number of people heard of all that He was doing and came to Him.<sup>9</sup> And He told His disciples that a boat should stand ready for Him because of the crowd, so that they would not crowd Him;<sup>10</sup> for He had healed many, with the result that all those who had afflictions pressed around Him in order to touch Him.<sup>11</sup> Whenever the unclean spirits saw Him, they would fall down before Him and shout, "You are the Son of God!"<sup>12</sup> And He earnestly warned them not to tell who He was. (Mark 3:6-12 NASB)

**Lk. 6: 11**

But they themselves were filled with rage, and discussed together what they might do to Jesus. (Luke 6:11 NASB)

## ***H. The Calling of the Twelve Disciples—Mk. 3: 13-19; Lk. 6: 12-16***

### ***Mk. 3: 13-19***

And He went up on the mountain and summoned those whom He Himself wanted, and they came to Him. <sup>14</sup> And He appointed twelve, so that they would be with Him and that He *could* send them out to preach, <sup>15</sup> and to have authority to cast out the demons. <sup>16</sup> And He appointed the twelve: Simon (to whom He gave the name Peter), <sup>17</sup> and James, the *son* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (to them He gave the name Boanerges, which means, "Sons of Thunder "); <sup>18</sup> and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Zealot; <sup>19</sup> and Judas Iscariot, who betrayed Him. (Mark 3:13-19 NASB)

### ***Lk. 6: 12-16***

It was at this time that He went off to the mountain to pray, and He spent the whole night in prayer to God. <sup>13</sup> And when day came, He called His disciples to Him and chose twelve of them, whom He also named as apostles: <sup>14</sup> Simon, whom He also named Peter, and Andrew his brother; and James and John; and Philip and Bartholomew; <sup>15</sup> and Matthew and Thomas; James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Simon who was called the Zealot; <sup>16</sup> Judas *the son* of James, and Judas Iscariot, who became a traitor. (Luke 6:12-16 NASB)

## ***I. The First Great Discourse in Matthew (The Sermon on the Mount)—Matt. 5—7; Lk. 6: 17-49***

### ***5. Citizens of the Kingdom—their Character***

#### ***a. The Beatitudes in Matthew—Matt. 5: 1-12***

##### ***Matt. 5: 1-12 (See full text of Matt. 5—7 in your bibles)***

When Jesus saw the crowds, He went up on the mountain; and after He sat down, His disciples came to Him. <sup>2</sup> He opened His mouth and *began* to teach them, saying, <sup>3</sup> "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. <sup>4</sup> "Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. <sup>5</sup> "Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. <sup>6</sup> "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. <sup>7</sup> "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. <sup>8</sup> "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. <sup>9</sup> "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. <sup>10</sup> "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. <sup>11</sup> "Blessed are you when *people* insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. <sup>12</sup> "Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you. (Matthew 5:1-12 NASB)

#### ***b. The Beatitudes in Luke—Lk. 6: 17-23***

Jesus came down with them and stood on a level place; and *there was* a large crowd of His disciples, and a great throng of people from all Judea and Jerusalem and the coastal region of Tyre and Sidon, <sup>18</sup> who had come to hear Him and to be healed of their diseases; and those who were troubled with unclean spirits were being cured. <sup>19</sup> And all the people were trying to touch Him, for power was coming from Him and healing *them* all. <sup>20</sup> And turning His gaze toward His disciples, He *began* to say, "Blessed *are* you *who are* poor, for yours is the kingdom of God. <sup>21</sup> "Blessed *are* you who hunger now, for you shall be satisfied. Blessed *are* you who weep now, for you shall laugh. <sup>22</sup> "Blessed are you when men hate you, and ostracize you, and insult you, and scorn your name as evil, for the sake

of the Son of Man. <sup>23</sup> "Be glad in that day and leap *for joy*, for behold, your reward is great in heaven. For in the same way their fathers used to treat the prophets. (Lk. 6: 17-23 NASB)

**Lk. 6: 24-49 (The remainder of Luke's treatment of the Sermon on the Mount)**

<sup>24</sup> "But woe to you who are rich, for you are receiving your comfort in full. <sup>25</sup> "Woe to you who are well-fed now, for you shall be hungry. Woe *to you* who laugh now, for you shall mourn and weep. <sup>26</sup> "Woe *to you* when all men speak well of you, for their fathers used to treat the false prophets in the same way. <sup>27</sup> "But I say to you who hear, love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, <sup>28</sup> bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. <sup>29</sup> "Whoever hits you on the cheek, offer him the other also; and whoever takes away your coat, do not withhold your shirt from him either. <sup>30</sup> "Give to everyone who asks of you, and whoever takes away what is yours, do not demand it back. <sup>31</sup> "Treat others the same way you want them to treat you. <sup>32</sup> "If you love those who love you, what credit is *that* to you? For even sinners love those who love them. <sup>33</sup> "If you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is *that* to you? For even sinners do the same. <sup>34</sup> "If you lend to those from whom you expect to receive, what credit is *that* to you? Even sinners lend to sinners in order to receive back the same *amount*. <sup>35</sup> "But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High; for He Himself is kind to ungrateful and evil *men*. <sup>36</sup> "Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful. <sup>37</sup> "Do not judge, and you will not be judged; and do not condemn, and you will not be condemned; pardon, and you will be pardoned. <sup>38</sup> "Give, and it will be given to you. They will pour into your lap a good measure-- pressed down, shaken together, *and* running over. For by your standard of measure it will be measured to you in return." <sup>39</sup> And He also spoke a parable to them: "A blind man cannot guide a blind man, can he? Will they not both fall into a pit? <sup>40</sup> "A pupil is not above his teacher; but everyone, after he has been fully trained, will be like his teacher. <sup>41</sup> "Why do you look at the speck that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log that is in your own eye? <sup>42</sup> "Or how can you say to your brother, 'Brother, let me take out the speck that is in your eye,' when you yourself do not see the log that is in your own eye? You hypocrite, first take the log out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to take out the speck that is in your brother's eye. <sup>43</sup> "For there is no good tree which produces bad fruit, nor, on the other hand, a bad tree which produces good fruit. <sup>44</sup> "For each tree is known by its own fruit. For men do not gather figs from thorns, nor do they pick grapes from a briar bush. <sup>45</sup> "The good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth what is good; and the evil *man* out of the evil *treasure* brings forth what is evil; for his mouth speaks from that which fills his heart. <sup>46</sup> "Why do you call Me, 'Lord, Lord,' and do not do what I say? <sup>47</sup> "Everyone who comes to Me and hears My words and acts on them, I will show you whom he is like: <sup>48</sup> he is like a man building a house, who dug deep and laid a foundation on the rock; and when a flood occurred, the torrent burst against that house and could not shake it, because it had been well built. <sup>49</sup> "But the one who has heard and has not acted *accordingly*, is like a man who built a house on the ground without any foundation; and the torrent burst against it and immediately it collapsed, and the ruin of that house was great." (Luke 6:24-49 NASB)

**c. A Guide for Prayer—the Lord's Prayer**

**Matt. 6: 9-13**

"Pray, then, in this way: 'Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. <sup>10</sup> 'Your kingdom come. Your will be done, On earth as it is in heaven. <sup>11</sup> 'Give us this day our daily bread. <sup>12</sup> 'And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. <sup>13</sup> 'And do not lead us into temptation, but



deliver us from evil. *For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.*' (Matthew 6:9-13 NASB)

**Luke 11:1-4**

It happened that while Jesus was praying in a certain place, after He had finished, one of His disciples said to Him, "Lord, teach us to pray just as John also taught his disciples."<sup>2</sup> And He said to them, "When you pray, say: 'Father, hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come.'<sup>3</sup> 'Give us each day our daily bread.'<sup>4</sup> 'And forgive us our sins, For we ourselves also forgive everyone who is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation.'" (Luke 11:1-4 NASB)

**12. Persistent Prayer—Matt. 7: 7-12; Lk. 11: 5-13**

**Matt. 7: 7-12**

"Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you."<sup>8</sup> "For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened."<sup>9</sup> "Or what man is there among you who, when his son asks for a loaf, will give him a stone?"<sup>10</sup> "Or if he asks for a fish, he will not give him a snake, will he?"<sup>11</sup> "If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give what is good to those who ask Him!"<sup>12</sup> "In everything, therefore, treat people the same way you want them to treat you, for this is the Law and the Prophets. (Matthew 7:7-12 NASB)

**Lk. 11: 5-13**

Then He said to them, "Suppose one of you has a friend, and goes to him at midnight and says to him, 'Friend, lend me three loaves;'<sup>6</sup> for a friend of mine has come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him';<sup>7</sup> and from inside he answers and says, 'Do not bother me; the door has already been shut and my children and I are in bed; I cannot get up and give you *anything*.'<sup>8</sup> "I tell you, even though he will not get up and give him *anything* because he is his friend, yet because of his persistence he will get up and give him as much as he needs."<sup>9</sup> "So I say to you, ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you."<sup>10</sup> "For everyone who asks, receives; and he who seeks, finds; and to him who knocks, it will be opened."<sup>11</sup> "Now suppose one of you fathers is asked by his son for a fish; he will not give him a snake instead of a fish, will he?"<sup>12</sup> "Or if he is asked for an egg, he will not give him a scorpion, will he?"<sup>13</sup> "If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him?" (Luke 11:5-13 NASB)

**14. The Conclusion to the Sermon on the Mount—Matt. 7: 13-27; Lk. 6: 44-49**

**Matt. 7: 13-27**

"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it."<sup>14</sup> "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it."<sup>15</sup> "Beware of the false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves."<sup>16</sup> "You will know them by their fruits. Grapes are not gathered from thorn *bushes* nor figs from thistles, are they?"<sup>17</sup> "So every good tree bears good fruit, but the bad tree bears bad fruit."<sup>18</sup> "A good tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a bad tree produce good fruit."<sup>19</sup> "Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire."<sup>20</sup> "So then, you will know them by their fruits."<sup>21</sup> "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven *will enter*."<sup>22</sup> "Many will

say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles?'<sup>23</sup> "And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; DEPART FROM ME, YOU WHO PRACTICE LAWLESSNESS.'<sup>24</sup> "Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them, may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock.<sup>25</sup> "And the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and *yet* it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock.<sup>26</sup> "Everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not act on them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand.<sup>27</sup> "The rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and it fell--and great was its fall." (Matthew 7:13-27 NASB)

**Luke 6:44-49**

<sup>44</sup> "For each tree is known by its own fruit. For men do not gather figs from thorns, nor do they pick grapes from a briar bush.<sup>45</sup> "The good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth what is good; and the evil *man* out of the evil *treasure* brings forth what is evil; for his mouth speaks from that which fills his heart.<sup>46</sup> "Why do you call Me, 'Lord, Lord,' and do not do what I say?<sup>47</sup> "Everyone who comes to Me and hears My words and acts on them, I will show you whom he is like:<sup>48</sup> he is like a man building a house, who dug deep and laid a foundation on the rock; and when a flood occurred, the torrent burst against that house and could not shake it, because it had been well built.<sup>49</sup> "But the one who has heard and has not acted *accordingly*, is like a man who built a house on the ground without any foundation; and the torrent burst against it and immediately it collapsed, and the ruin of that house was great." (Luke 6:44-49 NASB)

**J. The Healing of the Centurion's Servant—Matt. 8: 5-13; Lk. 7: 1-10**

**Matt. 8: 5-13**

And when Jesus entered Capernaum, a centurion came to Him, imploring Him,<sup>6</sup> and saying, "Lord, my servant is lying paralyzed at home, fearfully tormented."<sup>7</sup> Jesus said to him, "I will come and heal him."<sup>8</sup> But the centurion said, "Lord, I am not worthy for You to come under my roof, but just say the word, and my servant will be healed."<sup>9</sup> "For I also am a man under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to this one, 'Go!' and he goes, and to another, 'Come!' and he comes, and to my slave, 'Do this!' and he does *it*."<sup>10</sup> Now when Jesus heard *this*, He marveled and said to those who were following, "Truly I say to you, I have not found such great faith with anyone in Israel."<sup>11</sup> "I say to you that many will come from east and west, and recline *at the table* with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven;<sup>12</sup> but the sons of the kingdom will be cast out into the outer darkness; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth."<sup>13</sup> And Jesus said to the centurion, "Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed." And the servant was healed that *very* moment. (Matthew 8:5-13 NASB)

**Lk. 7: 1-10**

When He had completed all His discourse in the hearing of the people, He went to Capernaum.<sup>2</sup> And a centurion's slave, who was highly regarded by him, was sick and about to die.<sup>3</sup> When he heard about Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders asking Him to come and save the life of his slave.<sup>4</sup> When they came to Jesus, they earnestly implored Him, saying, "He is worthy for You to grant this to him;<sup>5</sup> for he loves our nation and it was he who built us our synagogue."<sup>6</sup> Now Jesus *started* on His way with them; and when He was not far from the house, the centurion sent friends, saying to Him, "Lord, do not trouble Yourself further, for I am not worthy for You to come under my roof;<sup>7</sup> for this reason I

did not even consider myself worthy to come to You, but *just* say the word, and my servant will be healed.<sup>8</sup> "For I also am a man placed under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to this one, 'Go!' and he goes, and to another, 'Come!' and he comes, and to my slave, 'Do this!' and he does it."<sup>9</sup> Now when Jesus heard this, He marveled at him, and turned and said to the crowd that was following Him, "I say to you, not even in Israel have I found such great faith."<sup>10</sup> When those who had been sent returned to the house, they found the slave in good health. (Luke 7:1-10 NASB)

***L. The Doubts of John the Baptist; Jesus' Mild Rebuke and Tribute—Matt.11: 2-19; Lk. 7: 18-35***

***Matt.11: 2-19***

Now when John, while imprisoned, heard of the works of Christ, he sent *word* by his disciples<sup>3</sup> and said to Him, "Are You the Expected One, or shall we look for someone else?"<sup>4</sup> Jesus answered and said to them, "Go and report to John what you hear and see:<sup>5</sup> *the BLIND RECEIVE SIGHT and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the POOR HAVE THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO THEM.*<sup>6</sup> "And blessed is he who does not take offense at Me."<sup>7</sup> As these men were going *away*, Jesus began to speak to the crowds about John, "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind?"<sup>8</sup> "But what did you go out to see? A man dressed in soft *clothing*? Those who wear soft *clothing* are in kings' palaces!"<sup>9</sup> "But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and one who is more than a prophet."<sup>10</sup> "This is the one about whom it is written, 'BEHOLD, I SEND MY MESSENGER AHEAD OF YOU, WHO WILL PREPARE YOUR WAY BEFORE YOU.'<sup>11</sup> "Truly I say to you, among those born of women there has not arisen *anyone* greater than John the Baptist! Yet the one who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he."<sup>12</sup> "From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and violent men take it by force."<sup>13</sup> "For all the prophets and the Law prophesied until John."<sup>14</sup> "And if you are willing to accept *it*, John himself is Elijah who was to come."<sup>15</sup> "He who has ears to hear, let him hear."<sup>16</sup> "But to what shall I compare this generation? It is like children sitting in the market places, who call out to the other *children*,<sup>17</sup> and say, 'We played the flute for you, and you did not dance; we sang a dirge, and you did not mourn.'<sup>18</sup> "For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, 'He has a demon!'<sup>19</sup> "The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Behold, a gluttonous man and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!' Yet wisdom is vindicated by her deeds." (Matthew 11:2-19 NASB)

***Lk. 7: 18-35***

The disciples of John reported to him about all these things.<sup>19</sup> Summoning two of his disciples, John sent them to the Lord, saying, "Are You the Expected One, or do we look for someone else?"<sup>20</sup> When the men came to Him, they said, "John the Baptist has sent us to You, to ask, 'Are You the Expected One, or do we look for someone else?'"<sup>21</sup> At that very time He cured many *people* of diseases and afflictions and evil spirits; and He gave sight to many *who were* blind.<sup>22</sup> And He answered and said to them, "Go and report to John what you have seen and heard: *the BLIND RECEIVE SIGHT, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, the POOR HAVE THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO THEM.*<sup>23</sup> "Blessed is he who does not take offense at Me."<sup>24</sup> When the messengers of John had left, He began to speak to the crowds about John, "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind?"<sup>25</sup> "But what did you go out to see? A man dressed in soft *clothing*? Those who are splendidly clothed and live in luxury are *found* in royal palaces!"<sup>26</sup> "But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I say to you, and one who is more than a prophet."<sup>27</sup> "This is the one about whom it is written, 'BEHOLD, I SEND MY MESSENGER AHEAD OF YOU,

WHO WILL PREPARE YOUR WAY BEFORE YOU.'<sup>28</sup> "I say to you, among those born of women there is no one greater than John; yet he who is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he."<sup>29</sup> When all the people and the tax collectors heard *this*, they acknowledged God's justice, having been baptized with the baptism of John.<sup>30</sup> But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected God's purpose for themselves, not having been baptized by John.<sup>31</sup> "To what then shall I compare the men of this generation, and what are they like?"<sup>32</sup> "They are like children who sit in the market place and call to one another, and they say, 'We played the flute for you, and you did not dance; we sang a dirge, and you did not weep.'<sup>33</sup> "For John the Baptist has come eating no bread and drinking no wine, and you say, 'He has a demon!'<sup>34</sup> "The Son of Man has come eating and drinking, and you say, 'Behold, a gluttonous man and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!'<sup>35</sup> "Yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children." (Luke 7:18-35 NASB)

***M. Unrepentant Cities—Matt. 11: 20-24; Lk. 10: 12-16***

***Matt. 11: 20-24***

Then He began to denounce the cities in which most of His miracles were done, because they did not repent.<sup>21</sup> "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes."<sup>22</sup> "Nevertheless I say to you, it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in *the* day of judgment than for you."<sup>23</sup> "And you, Capernaum, will not be exalted to heaven, will you? You will descend to Hades; for if the miracles had occurred in Sodom which occurred in you, it would have remained to this day."<sup>24</sup> "Nevertheless I say to you that it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in *the* day of judgment, than for you." (Matthew 11:20-24 NASB)

***Lk. 10: 12-16***

"I say to you, it will be more tolerable in that day for Sodom than for that city."<sup>13</sup> "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles had been performed in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes."<sup>14</sup> "But it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgment than for you."<sup>15</sup> "And you, Capernaum, will not be exalted to heaven, will you? You will be brought down to Hades!"<sup>16</sup> "The one who listens to you listens to Me, and the one who rejects you rejects Me; and he who rejects Me rejects the One who sent Me." (Luke 10:12-16 NASB)

***N. The Sovereign Self-Revelation of God the Father and God the Son—Matt. 11: 25-30; Lk. 10: 21-24***

***Matt. 11: 25-30***

At that time Jesus said, "I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from *the* wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants."<sup>26</sup> "Yes, Father, for this way was well-pleasing in Your sight."<sup>27</sup> "All things have been handed over to Me by My Father; and no one knows the Son except the Father; nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son wills to reveal *Him*."<sup>28</sup> "Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest."<sup>29</sup> "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and YOU WILL FIND REST FOR YOUR SOULS."<sup>30</sup> "For My yoke is easy and My burden is light." (Matthew 11:25-30 NASB)

**Lk. 10: 21-24**

<sup>21</sup> At that very time He rejoiced greatly in the Holy Spirit, and said, "I praise You, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from *the* wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants. Yes, Father, for this way was well-pleasing in Your sight." <sup>22</sup> "All things have been handed over to Me by My Father, and no one knows who the Son is except the Father, and who the Father is except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son wills to reveal *Him*." <sup>23</sup> Turning to the disciples, He said privately, "Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things you see, <sup>24</sup> for I say to you, that many prophets and kings wished to see the things which you see, and did not see *them*, and to hear the things which you hear, and did not hear *them*." (Luke 10:21-24 NASB)

**R. Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit—Matt. 12: 22-37; Mk. 3: 22-30; Lk. 11: 14-28**

**Matt. 12: 22-37**

Then a demon-possessed man *who was* blind and mute was brought to Jesus, and He healed him, so that the mute man spoke and saw. <sup>23</sup> All the crowds were amazed, and were saying, "This man cannot be the Son of David, can he?" <sup>24</sup> But when the Pharisees heard *this*, they said, "This man casts out demons only by Beelzebul the ruler of the demons." <sup>25</sup> And knowing their thoughts Jesus said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and any city or house divided against itself will not stand. <sup>26</sup> "If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand? <sup>27</sup> "If I by Beelzebul cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? For this reason they will be your judges. <sup>28</sup> "But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. <sup>29</sup> "Or how can anyone enter the strong man's house and carry off his property, unless he first binds the strong *man*? And then he will plunder his house. <sup>30</sup> "He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me scatters. <sup>31</sup> "Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. <sup>32</sup> "Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the *age* to come. <sup>33</sup> "Either make the tree good and its fruit good, or make the tree bad and its fruit bad; for the tree is known by its fruit. <sup>34</sup> "You brood of vipers, how can you, being evil, speak what is good? For the mouth speaks out of that which fills the heart. <sup>35</sup> "The good man brings out of *his* good treasure what is good; and the evil man brings out of *his* evil treasure what is evil. <sup>36</sup> "But I tell you that every careless word that people speak, they shall give an accounting for it in the day of judgment. <sup>37</sup> "For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned." (Matthew 12:22-37 NASB)

**Mk. 3: 22-30**

The scribes who came down from Jerusalem were saying, "He is possessed by Beelzebul," and "He casts out the demons by the ruler of the demons." <sup>23</sup> And He called them to Himself and began speaking to them in parables, "How can Satan cast out Satan? <sup>24</sup> "If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. <sup>25</sup> "If a house is divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand. <sup>26</sup> "If Satan has risen up against himself and is divided, he cannot stand, but he is finished! <sup>27</sup> "But no one can enter the strong man's house and plunder his property unless he first binds the strong man, and then he will plunder his house. <sup>28</sup> "Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter; <sup>29</sup> but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin " -- <sup>30</sup> because they were saying, "He has an unclean spirit." (Mark 3:22-30 NASB)

**Lk. 11: 14-28**

And He was casting out a demon, and it was mute; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed.<sup>15</sup> But some of them said, "He casts out demons by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons."<sup>16</sup> Others, to test *Him*, were demanding of Him a sign from heaven.<sup>17</sup> But He knew their thoughts and said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and a house *divided* against itself falls.<sup>18</sup> "If Satan also is divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? For you say that I cast out demons by Beelzebul.<sup>19</sup> "And if I by Beelzebul cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? So they will be your judges.<sup>20</sup> "But if I cast out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.<sup>21</sup> "When a strong *man*, fully armed, guards his own house, his possessions are undisturbed.<sup>22</sup> "But when someone stronger than he attacks him and overpowers him, he takes away from him all his armor on which he had relied and distributes his plunder.<sup>23</sup> "He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me, scatters.<sup>24</sup> "When the unclean spirit goes out of a man, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, and not finding any, it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.'<sup>25</sup> "And when it comes, it finds it swept and put in order.<sup>26</sup> "Then it goes and takes *along* seven other spirits more evil than itself, and they go in and live there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first."<sup>27</sup> While Jesus was saying these things, one of the women in the crowd raised her voice and said to Him, "Blessed is the womb that bore You and the breasts at which You nursed."<sup>28</sup> But He said, "On the contrary, blessed are those who hear the word of God and observe it." (Luke 11:14-28 NASB)

**S. The Multitudes Seek for a Sign—Matt. 12: 38-45; Lk. 11: 29-32**

**Matt. 12: 38-45**

Then some of the scribes and Pharisees said to Him, "Teacher, we want to see a sign from You."<sup>39</sup> But He answered and said to them, "An evil and adulterous generation craves for a sign; and *yet* no sign will be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet;<sup>40</sup> for just as JONAH WAS THREE DAYS AND THREE NIGHTS IN THE BELLY OF THE SEA MONSTER, so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.<sup>41</sup> "The men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation at the judgment, and will condemn it because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here.<sup>42</sup> "The Queen of *the* South will rise up with this generation at the judgment and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here.<sup>43</sup> "Now when the unclean spirit goes out of a man, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, and does not find *it*.<sup>44</sup> "Then it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came'; and when it comes, it finds *it* unoccupied, swept, and put in order.<sup>45</sup> "Then it goes and takes along with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first. That is the way it will also be with this evil generation." (Matthew 12:38-45 NASB)

**Lk. 11: 29-32**

As the crowds were increasing, He began to say, "This generation is a wicked generation; it seeks for a sign, and *yet* no sign will be given to it but the sign of Jonah.<sup>30</sup> "For just as Jonah became a sign to the Ninevites, so will the Son of Man be to this generation.<sup>31</sup> "The Queen of the South will rise up with the men of this generation at the judgment and condemn them, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here.<sup>32</sup> "The men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation at the judgment and condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here. (Luke 11:29-32 NASB)

***T. Jesus' Mother and Brothers—Matt. 12: 46-50; Mk. 3: 31-35; Lk. 8: 19-21***

***Matt. 12: 46-50***

While He was still speaking to the crowds, behold, His mother and brothers were standing outside, seeking to speak to Him.<sup>47</sup> Someone said to Him, "Behold, Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside seeking to speak to You."<sup>48</sup> But Jesus answered the one who was telling Him and said, "Who is My mother and who are My brothers?"<sup>49</sup> And stretching out His hand toward His disciples, He said, "Behold My mother and My brothers!"<sup>50</sup> "For whoever does the will of My Father who is in heaven, he is My brother and sister and mother." (Matthew 12:46-50 NASB)

***Mk. 3: 31-35***

Then His mother and His brothers arrived, and standing outside they sent *word* to Him and called Him.<sup>32</sup> A crowd was sitting around Him, and they said to Him, "Behold, Your mother and Your brothers are outside looking for You."<sup>33</sup> Answering them, He said, "Who are My mother and My brothers?"<sup>34</sup> Looking about at those who were sitting around Him, He said, "Behold My mother and My brothers!"<sup>35</sup> "For whoever does the will of God, he is My brother and sister and mother." (Mark 3:31-35 NASB)

***Lk. 8: 19-21***

And His mother and brothers came to Him, and they were unable to get to Him because of the crowd.<sup>20</sup> And it was reported to Him, "Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, wishing to see You."<sup>21</sup> But He answered and said to them, "My mother and My brothers are these who hear the word of God and do it." (Luke 8:19-21 NASB)

***U. The Third Great Discourse in Matthew: Parables of the Kingdom—Matt. 13: 1-53; Mk. 4: 1-34; Lk. 8: 4-18***

***1. The Purpose of the Parables—Matt. 13: 11-17; Mk. 4: 10-12; Lk. 8: 8b-10***

***Matt. 13: 11-17***

Jesus answered them, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted."<sup>12</sup> "For whoever has, to him *more* shall be given, and he will have an abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him."<sup>13</sup> "Therefore I speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand."<sup>14</sup> "In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, 'YOU WILL KEEP ON HEARING, BUT WILL NOT UNDERSTAND; YOU WILL KEEP ON SEEING, BUT WILL NOT PERCEIVE;'<sup>15</sup> FOR THE HEART OF THIS PEOPLE HAS BECOME DULL, WITH THEIR EARS THEY SCARCELY HEAR, AND THEY HAVE CLOSED THEIR EYES, OTHERWISE THEY WOULD SEE WITH THEIR EYES, HEAR WITH THEIR EARS, AND UNDERSTAND WITH THEIR HEART AND RETURN, AND I WOULD HEAL THEM.'<sup>16</sup> "But blessed are your eyes, because they see; and your ears, because they hear."<sup>17</sup> "For truly I say to you that many prophets and righteous men desired to see what you see, and did not see *it*, and to hear what you hear, and did not hear *it*." (Matthew 13:11-17 NASB)

***Mk. 4: 10-12***

As soon as He was alone, His followers, along with the twelve, *began* asking Him *about* the parables.<sup>11</sup> And He was saying to them, "To you has been given the mystery of the kingdom of God, but those who are outside get everything in parables,<sup>12</sup> so that WHILE SEEING, THEY MAY SEE

AND NOT PERCEIVE, AND WHILE HEARING, THEY MAY HEAR AND NOT UNDERSTAND, OTHERWISE THEY MIGHT RETURN AND BE FORGIVEN." (Mark 4:10-12 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 8b-10**

As He said these things, He would call out, "He who has ears to hear, let him hear."<sup>9</sup> His disciples began questioning Him as to what this parable meant.<sup>10</sup> And He said, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the rest *it is* in parables, so that SEEING THEY MAY NOT SEE, AND HEARING THEY MAY NOT UNDERSTAND. (Luke 8:8-10 NASB)

**2. The Parable of the Sower—Matt. 13: 3-9; 18-23; Mk. 4: 3-9, 13-20; Lk. 8: 4-15**

**Matt. 13: 3-9; 18-23**

And He spoke many things to them in parables, saying, "Behold, the sower went out to sow;<sup>4</sup> and as he sowed, some *seeds* fell beside the road, and the birds came and ate them up.<sup>5</sup> "Others fell on the rocky places, where they did not have much soil; and immediately they sprang up, because they had no depth of soil.<sup>6</sup> "But when the sun had risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.<sup>7</sup> "Others fell among the thorns, and the thorns came up and choked them out.<sup>8</sup> "And others fell on the good soil and yielded a crop, some a hundredfold, some sixty, and some thirty.<sup>9</sup> "He who has ears, let him hear." (Matthew 13:3-9 NASB)

**Matt. 13: 18-23**

"Hear then the parable of the sower.<sup>19</sup> "When anyone hears the word of the kingdom and does not understand it, the evil *one* comes and snatches away what has been sown in his heart. This is the one on whom seed was sown beside the road.<sup>20</sup> "The one on whom seed was sown on the rocky places, this is the man who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy;<sup>21</sup> yet he has no *firm* root in himself, but is *only* temporary, and when affliction or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he falls away.<sup>22</sup> "And the one on whom seed was sown among the thorns, this is the man who hears the word, and the worry of the world and the deceitfulness of wealth choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful.<sup>23</sup> "And the one on whom seed was sown on the good soil, this is the man who hears the word and understands it; who indeed bears fruit and brings forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, and some thirty." (Matthew 13:18-23 NASB)

**Mk. 4: 3-9**

"Listen *to this!* Behold, the sower went out to sow;<sup>4</sup> as he was sowing, some *seed* fell beside the road, and the birds came and ate it up.<sup>5</sup> "Other *seed* fell on the rocky *ground* where it did not have much soil; and immediately it sprang up because it had no depth of soil.<sup>6</sup> "And after the sun had risen, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away.<sup>7</sup> "Other *seed* fell among the thorns, and the thorns came up and choked it, and it yielded no crop.<sup>8</sup> "Other *seeds* fell into the good soil, and as they grew up and increased, they yielded a crop and produced thirty, sixty, and a hundredfold."<sup>9</sup> And He was saying, "He who has ears to hear, let him hear." (Mark 4:3-9 NASB)

**Mark 4: 13-20**

And He said to them, "Do you not understand this parable? How will you understand all the parables?<sup>14</sup> "The sower sows the word.<sup>15</sup> "These are the ones who are beside the road where the word is sown; and when they hear, immediately Satan comes and takes away the word which has been sown in



them. <sup>16</sup> "In a similar way these are the ones on whom seed was sown on the rocky *places*, who, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with joy; <sup>17</sup> and they have no *firm* root in themselves, but are *only* temporary; then, when affliction or persecution arises because of the word, immediately they fall away. <sup>18</sup> "And others are the ones on whom seed was sown among the thorns; these are the ones who have heard the word, <sup>19</sup> but the worries of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires for other things enter in and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. <sup>20</sup> "And those are the ones on whom seed was sown on the good soil; and they hear the word and accept it and bear fruit, thirty, sixty, and a hundredfold." (Mark 4:13-20 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 4-15**

When a large crowd was coming together, and those from the various cities were journeying to Him, He spoke by way of a parable: <sup>5</sup> "The sower went out to sow his seed; and as he sowed, some fell beside the road, and it was trampled under foot and the birds of the air ate it up. <sup>6</sup> "Other *seed* fell on rocky *soil*, and as soon as it grew up, it withered away, because it had no moisture. <sup>7</sup> "Other *seed* fell among the thorns; and the thorns grew up with it and choked it out. <sup>8</sup> "Other *seed* fell into the good soil, and grew up, and produced a crop a hundred times as great." As He said these things, He would call out, "He who has ears to hear, let him hear." <sup>9</sup> His disciples *began* questioning Him as to what this parable meant. <sup>10</sup> And He said, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the rest *it is* in parables, so that SEEING THEY MAY NOT SEE, AND HEARING THEY MAY NOT UNDERSTAND. <sup>11</sup> "Now the parable is this: the seed is the word of God. <sup>12</sup> "Those beside the road are those who have heard; then the devil comes and takes away the word from their heart, so that they will not believe and be saved. <sup>13</sup> "Those on the rocky *soil are* those who, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no *firm* root; they believe for a while, and in time of temptation fall away. <sup>14</sup> "The *seed* which fell among the thorns, these are the ones who have heard, and as they go on their way they are choked with worries and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to maturity. <sup>15</sup> "But the *seed* in the good soil, these are the ones who have heard the word in an honest and good heart, and hold it fast, and bear fruit with perseverance. (Luke 8:4-15 NASB)

**4. The Parable of the Mustard Seed and the Leaven—Matt. 13: 31-33; Mk. 4: 30-32; Lk. 13: 18-20**

**Matt. 13: 31-33**

He presented another parable to them, saying, "The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field; <sup>32</sup> and this is smaller than all *other* seeds, but when it is full grown, it is larger than the garden plants and becomes a tree, so that THE BIRDS OF THE AIR come and NEST IN ITS BRANCHES." <sup>33</sup> He spoke another parable to them, "The kingdom of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three pecks of flour until it was all leavened." (Matthew 13:31-33 NASB)

**Mk. 4: 30-32**

And He said, "How shall we picture the kingdom of God, or by what parable shall we present it? <sup>31</sup> "It is like a mustard seed, which, when sown upon the soil, though it is smaller than all the seeds that are upon the soil, <sup>32</sup> yet when it is sown, it grows up and becomes larger than all the garden plants and forms large branches; so that THE BIRDS OF THE AIR can NEST UNDER ITS SHADE." (Mark 4:30-32 NASB)

**Lk. 13: 18-20**

So He was saying, "What is the kingdom of God like, and to what shall I compare it?"<sup>19</sup> "It is like a mustard seed, which a man took and threw into his own garden; and it grew and became a tree, and THE BIRDS OF THE AIR NESTED IN ITS BRANCHES."<sup>20</sup> And again He said, "To what shall I compare the kingdom of God? (Luke 13:18-20 NASB)

**9. Additional Parables found in the Mark and Luke Discourse on Parables—Mk. 4: 21-29**

**Lk. 8: 16-18**

**Mk. 4: 21-29**

And He was saying to them, "A lamp is not brought to be put under a basket, is it, or under a bed? Is it not *brought* to be put on the lampstand?"<sup>22</sup> "For nothing is hidden, except to be revealed; nor has *anything* been secret, but that it would come to light."<sup>23</sup> "If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear."<sup>24</sup> And He was saying to them, "Take care what you listen to. By your standard of measure it will be measured to you; and more will be given you besides."<sup>25</sup> "For whoever has, to him *more* shall be given; and whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him."<sup>26</sup> And He was saying, "The kingdom of God is like a man who casts seed upon the soil;<sup>27</sup> and he goes to bed at night and gets up by day, and the seed sprouts and grows-- how, he himself does not know."<sup>28</sup> "The soil produces crops by itself; first the blade, then the head, then the mature grain in the head."<sup>29</sup> "But when the crop permits, he immediately puts in the sickle, because the harvest has come." (Mark 4:21-29 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 16-18**

"Now no one after lighting a lamp covers it over with a container, or puts it under a bed; but he puts it on a lampstand, so that those who come in may see the light."<sup>17</sup> "For nothing is hidden that will not become evident, nor *anything* secret that will not be known and come to light."<sup>18</sup> "So take care how you listen; for whoever has, to him *more* shall be given; and whoever does not have, even what he thinks he has shall be taken away from him." (Luke 8:16-18 NASB)

**V. The Cost of Discipleship; the Calming of the Sea —Matt. 8: 18-27; Mk. 4: 35-41; Lk. 8: 22-25; 9: 57-62**

**1. The Cost of Discipleship—Matt. 8: 18-22; Lk. 9: 57-62**

**Matt. 8: 18-22**

Now when Jesus saw a crowd around Him, He gave orders to depart to the other side *of the sea*.<sup>19</sup> Then a scribe came and said to Him, "Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go."<sup>20</sup> Jesus said to him, "The foxes have holes and the birds of the air *have* nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay His head."<sup>21</sup> Another of the disciples said to Him, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father."<sup>22</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead." (Matthew 8: 18-22 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 57-62**

As they were going along the road, someone said to Him, "I will follow You wherever You go."<sup>58</sup> And Jesus said to him, "The foxes have holes and the birds of the air *have* nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay His head."<sup>59</sup> And He said to another, "Follow Me." But he said, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father."<sup>60</sup> But He said to him, "Allow the dead to bury their own dead; but as

for you, go and proclaim everywhere the kingdom of God." <sup>61</sup> Another also said, "I will follow You, Lord; but first permit me to say good-bye to those at home." <sup>62</sup> But Jesus said to him, "No one, after putting his hand to the plow and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God." (Luke 9:57-62 NASB)

## **2. The Calming of the Sea—Matt. 8: 23-27; Mk. 4: 35-41; Lk. 8: 22-25**

### **Matt. 8: 23-27**

<sup>23</sup> When He got into the boat, His disciples followed Him. <sup>24</sup> And behold, there arose a great storm on the sea, so that the boat was being covered with the waves; but Jesus Himself was asleep. <sup>25</sup> And they came to *Him* and woke Him, saying, "Save *us*, Lord; we are perishing!" <sup>26</sup> He said to them, "Why are you afraid, you men of little faith?" Then He got up and rebuked the winds and the sea, and it became perfectly calm. <sup>27</sup> The men were amazed, and said, "What kind of a man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey Him?" (Matthew 8:23-27 NASB)

### **Mk. 4: 35-41**

On that day, when evening came, He said to them, "Let us go over to the other side." <sup>36</sup> Leaving the crowd, they took Him along with them in the boat, just as He was; and other boats were with Him. <sup>37</sup> And there arose a fierce gale of wind, and the waves were breaking over the boat so much that the boat was already filling up. <sup>38</sup> Jesus Himself was in the stern, asleep on the cushion; and they woke Him and said to Him, "Teacher, do You not care that we are perishing?" <sup>39</sup> And He got up and rebuked the wind and said to the sea, "Hush, be still." And the wind died down and it became perfectly calm. <sup>40</sup> And He said to them, "Why are you afraid? Do you still have no faith?" <sup>41</sup> They became very much afraid and said to one another, "Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey Him?" (Mark 4:35-41 NASB)

### **Lk. 8: 22-25**

Now on one of *those* days Jesus and His disciples got into a boat, and He said to them, "Let us go over to the other side of the lake." So they launched out. <sup>23</sup> But as they were sailing along He fell asleep; and a fierce gale of wind descended on the lake, and they *began* to be swamped and to be in danger. <sup>24</sup> They came to Jesus and woke Him up, saying, "Master, Master, we are perishing!" And He got up and rebuked the wind and the surging waves, and they stopped, and it became calm. <sup>25</sup> And He said to them, "Where is your faith?" They were fearful and amazed, saying to one another, "Who then is this, that He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey Him?" (Luke 8:22-25 NASB)

## **W. Healing of the Gerasene (Gadarene) Demoniac(s)—Matt. 8: 28-34; Mk. 5: 1-21; Lk. 8: 26-39**

### **Matt. 8: 28-34**

When He came to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, two men who were demon-possessed met Him as they were coming out of the tombs. *They were* so extremely violent that no one could pass by that way. <sup>29</sup> And they cried out, saying, "What business do we have with each other, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" <sup>30</sup> Now there was a herd of many swine feeding at a distance from them. <sup>31</sup> The demons *began* to entreat Him, saying, "If You *are going to* cast us out, send us into the herd of swine." <sup>32</sup> And He said to them, "Go!" And they came out and went into the swine, and the whole herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea and perished in the waters. <sup>33</sup> The herdsmen ran away, and went to the city and reported everything, including what had happened to the demoniacs. <sup>34</sup> And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw Him, they implored Him to leave their region. (Matthew 8:28-34 NASB)

**Mk. 5: 1-21**

They came to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gerasenes.<sup>2</sup> When He got out of the boat, immediately a man from the tombs with an unclean spirit met Him,<sup>3</sup> and he had his dwelling among the tombs. And no one was able to bind him anymore, even with a chain;<sup>4</sup> because he had often been bound with shackles and chains, and the chains had been torn apart by him and the shackles broken in pieces, and no one was strong enough to subdue him.<sup>5</sup> Constantly, night and day, he was screaming among the tombs and in the mountains, and gashing himself with stones.<sup>6</sup> Seeing Jesus from a distance, he ran up and bowed down before Him;<sup>7</sup> and shouting with a loud voice, he said, "What business do we have with each other, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God, do not torment me!"<sup>8</sup> For He had been saying to him, "Come out of the man, you unclean spirit!"<sup>9</sup> And He was asking him, "What is your name?" And he said to Him, "My name is Legion; for we are many."<sup>10</sup> And he *began* to implore Him earnestly not to send them out of the country.<sup>11</sup> Now there was a large herd of swine feeding nearby on the mountain.<sup>12</sup> *The demons* implored Him, saying, "Send us into the swine so that we may enter them."<sup>13</sup> Jesus gave them permission. And coming out, the unclean spirits entered the swine; and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea, about two thousand *of them*; and they were drowned in the sea.<sup>14</sup> Their herdsmen ran away and reported it in the city and in the country. And *the people* came to see what it was that had happened.<sup>15</sup> They came to Jesus and observed the man who had been demon-possessed sitting down, clothed and in his right mind, the very man who had had the "legion"; and they became frightened.<sup>16</sup> Those who had seen it described to them how it had happened to the demon-possessed man, and *all* about the swine.<sup>17</sup> And they began to implore Him to leave their region.<sup>18</sup> As He was getting into the boat, the man who had been demon-possessed was imploring Him that he might accompany Him.<sup>19</sup> And He did not let him, but He said to him, "Go home to your people and report to them what great things the Lord has done for you, and *how* He had mercy on you."<sup>20</sup> And he went away and began to proclaim in Decapolis what great things Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed.<sup>21</sup> When Jesus had crossed over again in the boat to the other side, a large crowd gathered around Him; and so He stayed by the seashore. (Mark 5:1-21 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 26-39**

Then they sailed to the country of the Gerasenes, which is opposite Galilee.<sup>27</sup> And when He came out onto the land, He was met by a man from the city who was possessed with demons; and who had not put on any clothing for a long time, and was not living in a house, but in the tombs.<sup>28</sup> Seeing Jesus, he cried out and fell before Him, and said in a loud voice, "What business do we have with each other, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg You, do not torment me."<sup>29</sup> For He had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had seized him many times; and he was bound with chains and shackles and kept under guard, and *yet* he would break his bonds and be driven by the demon into the desert.<sup>30</sup> And Jesus asked him, "What is your name?" And he said, "Legion"; for many demons had entered him.<sup>31</sup> They were imploring Him not to command them to go away into the abyss.<sup>32</sup> Now there was a herd of many swine feeding there on the mountain; and *the demons* implored Him to permit them to enter the swine. And He gave them permission.<sup>33</sup> And the demons came out of the man and entered the swine; and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the lake and was drowned.<sup>34</sup> When the herdsmen saw what had happened, they ran away and reported it in the city and *out* in the country.<sup>35</sup> *The people* went out to see what had happened; and they came to Jesus, and found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting down at the feet of Jesus, clothed and in his right mind; and they became frightened.<sup>36</sup> Those who had seen it reported to them how the man who was demon-possessed had been made well.<sup>37</sup> And all the people of the country of the

Gerasenes and the surrounding district asked Him to leave them, for they were gripped with great fear; and He got into a boat and returned.<sup>38</sup> But the man from whom the demons had gone out was begging Him that he might accompany Him; but He sent him away, saying,<sup>39</sup> "Return to your house and describe what great things God has done for you." So he went away, proclaiming throughout the whole city what great things Jesus had done for him. (Luke 8:26-39 NASB)

**X. Jesus Returns to Capernaum—Matt. 9: 1; Mk. 5: 21; Lk. 8: 40**

**Matt. 9: 1**

Getting into a boat, Jesus crossed over *the sea* and came to His own city. (Matthew 9:1 NASB)

**Mk. 5: 21**

When Jesus had crossed over again in the boat to the other side, a large crowd gathered around Him; and so He stayed by the seashore. (Mark 5:21 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 40**

And as Jesus returned, the people welcomed Him, for they had all been waiting for Him. (Luke 8:40 NASB)

**Y. Matthew's Dinner—Matt. 9: 10-17; Mk. 2: 15-22; Lk. 5: 29-39**

**1. Eating with tax-collectors and sinners—Matt. 9: 10-13; Mk. 2: 15-17; Lk. 5: 29-32**

**Matt. 9: 10-13**

Then it happened that as Jesus was reclining *at the table* in the house, behold, many tax collectors and sinners came and were dining with Jesus and His disciples.<sup>11</sup> When the Pharisees saw *this*, they said to His disciples, "Why is your Teacher eating with the tax collectors and sinners?"<sup>12</sup> But when Jesus heard *this*, He said, "*It is* not those who are healthy who need a physician, but those who are sick."<sup>13</sup> "But go and learn what this means: 'I DESIRE COMPASSION, AND NOT SACRIFICE,' for I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners." (Matthew 9: 10-13 NASB)

**Mk. 2: 15-17**

And it happened that He was reclining *at the table* in his house, and many tax collectors and sinners were dining with Jesus and His disciples; for there were many of them, and they were following Him.<sup>16</sup> When the scribes of the Pharisees saw that He was eating with the sinners and tax collectors, they said to His disciples, "Why is He eating and drinking with tax collectors and sinners?"<sup>17</sup> And hearing *this*, Jesus said to them, "*It is* not those who are healthy who need a physician, but those who are sick; I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners." (Mark 2: 15-17 NASB)

**Lk. 5: 29-32**

And Levi gave a big reception for Him in his house; and there was a great crowd of tax collectors and other *people* who were reclining *at the table* with them.<sup>30</sup> The Pharisees and their scribes *began* grumbling at His disciples, saying, "Why do you eat and drink with the tax collectors and sinners?"<sup>31</sup> And Jesus answered and said to them, "*It is* not those who are well who need a physician, but those who are sick."<sup>32</sup> "I have not come to call the righteous but sinners to repentance." (Luke 5: 29-32 NASB)

**2. The Question of Jesus' Authority: Fasting or Feasting (?); the Lesson of Cloth and Wineskins—Matt. 9: 14-17; Mk. 2: 18-22; Luke 5:33-39**

**Matt. 9: 14-17**

<sup>14</sup> Then the disciples of John came to Him, asking, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast, but Your disciples do not fast?" <sup>15</sup> And Jesus said to them, "The attendants of the bridegroom cannot mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them, can they? But the days will come when the bridegroom is taken away from them, and then they will fast. <sup>16</sup> "But no one puts a patch of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for the patch pulls away from the garment, and a worse tear results. <sup>17</sup> "Nor do *people* put new wine into old wineskins; otherwise the wineskins burst, and the wine pours out and the wineskins are ruined; but they put new wine into fresh wineskins, and both are preserved." (Matthew 9:14-17 NASB)

**Mk. 2: 18-22**

<sup>18</sup> John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting; and they came and said to Him, "Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but Your disciples do not fast?" <sup>19</sup> And Jesus said to them, "While the bridegroom is with them, the attendants of the bridegroom cannot fast, can they? So long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. <sup>20</sup> "But the days will come when the bridegroom is taken away from them, and then they will fast in that day. <sup>21</sup> "No one sews a patch of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; otherwise the patch pulls away from it, the new from the old, and a worse tear results. <sup>22</sup> "No one puts new wine into old wineskins; otherwise the wine will burst the skins, and the wine is lost and the skins *as well*; but *one puts* new wine into fresh wineskins." (Mark 2:18-22 NASB)

**Luke 5:33-39**

<sup>33</sup> And they said to Him, "The disciples of John often fast and offer prayers, the *disciples* of the Pharisees also do the same, but Yours eat and drink." <sup>34</sup> And Jesus said to them, "You cannot make the attendants of the bridegroom fast while the bridegroom is with them, can you? <sup>35</sup> "But *the* days will come; and when the bridegroom is taken away from them, then they will fast in those days." <sup>36</sup> And He was also telling them a parable: "No one tears a piece of cloth from a new garment and puts it on an old garment; otherwise he will both tear the new, and the piece from the new will not match the old. <sup>37</sup> "And no one puts new wine into old wineskins; otherwise the new wine will burst the skins and it will be spilled out, and the skins will be ruined. <sup>38</sup> "But new wine must be put into fresh wineskins. <sup>39</sup> "And no one, after drinking old *wine* wishes for new; for he says, "The old is good *enough*.'" (Luke 5:33-39 NASB)

**Z. The Healing of Jairus' Daughter and the Woman with a Hemorrhage—Matt. 9: 18-26; Mk. 5: 21-43; Lk. 8: 40-56**

**Matt. 9: 18-26**

While He was saying these things to them, a *synagogue* official came and bowed down before Him, and said, "My daughter has just died; but come and lay Your hand on her, and she will live." <sup>19</sup> Jesus got up and *began* to follow him, and *so did* His disciples. <sup>20</sup> And a woman who had been suffering from a hemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind Him and touched the fringe of His cloak; <sup>21</sup> for she was saying to herself, "If I only touch His garment, I will get well." <sup>22</sup> But Jesus turning and seeing her said, "Daughter, take courage; your faith has made you well." At once the woman was made well. <sup>23</sup> When Jesus came into the official's house, and saw the flute-players and the crowd in noisy disorder, <sup>24</sup> He said, "Leave; for the girl has not died, but is asleep." And they *began* laughing at

Him.<sup>25</sup> But when the crowd had been sent out, He entered and took her by the hand, and the girl got up.<sup>26</sup> This news spread throughout all that land. (Matthew 9:18-26 NASB)

**Mk. 5: 21-43**

When Jesus had crossed over again in the boat to the other side, a large crowd gathered around Him; and so He stayed by the seashore.<sup>22</sup> One of the synagogue officials named Jairus came up, and on seeing Him, fell at His feet<sup>23</sup> and implored Him earnestly, saying, "My little daughter is at the point of death; *please* come and lay Your hands on her, so that she will get well and live."<sup>24</sup> And He went off with him; and a large crowd was following Him and pressing in on Him.<sup>25</sup> A woman who had had a hemorrhage for twelve years,<sup>26</sup> and had endured much at the hands of many physicians, and had spent all that she had and was not helped at all, but rather had grown worse--<sup>27</sup> after hearing about Jesus, she came up in the crowd behind *Him* and touched His cloak.<sup>28</sup> For she thought, "If I just touch His garments, I will get well."<sup>29</sup> Immediately the flow of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her affliction.<sup>30</sup> Immediately Jesus, perceiving in Himself that the power *proceeding* from Him had gone forth, turned around in the crowd and said, "Who touched My garments?"<sup>31</sup> And His disciples said to Him, "You see the crowd pressing in on You, and You say, 'Who touched Me?'"<sup>32</sup> And He looked around to see the woman who had done this.<sup>33</sup> But the woman fearing and trembling, aware of what had happened to her, came and fell down before Him and told Him the whole truth.<sup>34</sup> And He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well; go in peace and be healed of your affliction."<sup>35</sup> While He was still speaking, they came from the *house of* the synagogue official, saying, "Your daughter has died; why trouble the Teacher anymore?"<sup>36</sup> But Jesus, overhearing what was being spoken, said to the synagogue official, "Do not be afraid *any longer*, only believe."<sup>37</sup> And He allowed no one to accompany Him, except Peter and James and John the brother of James.<sup>38</sup> They came to the house of the synagogue official; and He saw a commotion, and *people* loudly weeping and wailing.<sup>39</sup> And entering in, He said to them, "Why make a commotion and weep? The child has not died, but is asleep."<sup>40</sup> They *began* laughing at Him. But putting them all out, He took along the child's father and mother and His own companions, and entered *the room* where the child was.<sup>41</sup> Taking the child by the hand, He said to her, "Talitha kum!" (which translated means, "Little girl, I say to you, get up!").<sup>42</sup> Immediately the girl got up and *began* to walk, for she was twelve years old. And immediately they were completely astounded.<sup>43</sup> And He gave them strict orders that no one should know about this, and He said that *something* should be given her to eat. (Mark 5:21-43 NASB)

**Lk. 8: 40-56**

And as Jesus returned, the people welcomed Him, for they had all been waiting for Him.<sup>41</sup> And there came a man named Jairus, and he was an official of the synagogue; and he fell at Jesus' feet, and *began* to implore Him to come to his house;<sup>42</sup> for he had an only daughter, about twelve years old, and she was dying. But as He went, the crowds were pressing against Him.<sup>43</sup> And a woman who had a hemorrhage for twelve years, and could not be healed by anyone,<sup>44</sup> came up behind Him and touched the fringe of His cloak, and immediately her hemorrhage stopped.<sup>45</sup> And Jesus said, "Who is the one who touched Me?" And while they were all denying it, Peter said, "Master, the people are crowding and pressing in on You."<sup>46</sup> But Jesus said, "Someone did touch Me, for I was aware that power had gone out of Me."<sup>47</sup> When the woman saw that she had not escaped notice, she came trembling and fell down before Him, and declared in the presence of all the people the reason why she had touched Him, and how she had been immediately healed.<sup>48</sup> And He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well; go in peace."<sup>49</sup> While He was still speaking, someone came from *the*

*house of the synagogue official, saying, "Your daughter has died; do not trouble the Teacher anymore."*<sup>50</sup> But when Jesus heard *this*, He answered him, "Do not be afraid *any longer*; only believe, and she will be made well."<sup>51</sup> When He came to the house, He did not allow anyone to enter with Him, except Peter and John and James, and the girl's father and mother.<sup>52</sup> Now they were all weeping and lamenting for her; but He said, "Stop weeping, for she has not died, but is asleep."<sup>53</sup> And they *began* laughing at Him, knowing that she had died.<sup>54</sup> He, however, took her by the hand and called, saying, "Child, arise!"<sup>55</sup> And her spirit returned, and she got up immediately; and He gave orders for *something* to be given her to eat.<sup>56</sup> Her parents were amazed; but He instructed them to tell no one what had happened. (Luke 8:40-56 NASB)

***BB. Jesus Rejected in Nazareth— Matt. 13: 53-58; Mk. 6: 1-6; Lk. 4: 16-30***

***Matt. 13: 53-58***

When Jesus had finished these parables, He departed from there.<sup>54</sup> He came to His hometown and *began* teaching them in their synagogue, so that they were astonished, and said, "Where *did* this man *get* this wisdom and *these* miraculous powers?"<sup>55</sup> "Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not His mother called Mary, and His brothers, James and Joseph and Simon and Judas?"<sup>56</sup> "And His sisters, are they not all with us? Where then *did* this man *get* all these things?"<sup>57</sup> And they took offense at Him. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honor except in his hometown and in his *own* household."<sup>58</sup> And He did not do many miracles there because of their unbelief. (Matthew 13:53-58 NASB)

***Mk. 6: 1-6***

Jesus went out from there and came into His hometown; and His disciples followed Him.<sup>2</sup> When the Sabbath came, He began to teach in the synagogue; and the many listeners were astonished, saying, "Where did this man *get* these things, and what is *this* wisdom given to Him, and such miracles as these performed by His hands?"<sup>3</sup> "Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James and Joses and Judas and Simon? Are not His sisters here with us?" And they took offense at Him.<sup>4</sup> Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honor except in his hometown and among his *own* relatives and in his *own* household."<sup>5</sup> And He could do no miracle there except that He laid His hands on a few sick people and healed them.<sup>6</sup> And He wondered at their unbelief. And He was going around the villages teaching. (Mark 6:1-6 NASB)

***Lk. 4: 16-30***

And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up; and as was His custom, He entered the synagogue on the Sabbath, and stood up to read.<sup>17</sup> And the book of the prophet Isaiah was handed to Him. And He opened the book and found the place where it was written,<sup>18</sup> "THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME, BECAUSE HE ANOINTED ME TO PREACH THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR. HE HAS SENT ME TO PROCLAIM RELEASE TO THE CAPTIVES, AND RECOVERY OF SIGHT TO THE BLIND, TO SET FREE THOSE WHO ARE OPPRESSED,<sup>19</sup> TO PROCLAIM THE FAVORABLE YEAR OF THE LORD."<sup>20</sup> And He closed the book, gave it back to the attendant and sat down; and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed on Him.<sup>21</sup> And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing."<sup>22</sup> And all were speaking well of Him, and wondering at the gracious words which were falling from His lips; and they were saying, "Is this not Joseph's son?"<sup>23</sup> And He said to them, "No doubt you will quote this proverb to Me, 'Physician, heal yourself! Whatever we heard was done at Capernaum, do here in your hometown as well.'"<sup>24</sup> And He said, "Truly I say to you, no prophet is welcome in his hometown."<sup>25</sup> "But I say to



you in truth, there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the sky was shut up for three years and six months, when a great famine came over all the land;<sup>26</sup> and yet Elijah was sent to none of them, but only to Zarephath, *in the land* of Sidon, to a woman who was a widow.<sup>27</sup> "And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian."<sup>28</sup> And all *the people* in the synagogue were filled with rage as they heard these things;<sup>29</sup> and they got up and drove Him out of the city, and led Him to the brow of the hill on which their city had been built, in order to throw Him down the cliff.<sup>30</sup> But passing through their midst, He went His way. (Luke 4:16-30 NASB)

***CC. The Second Great Discourse in Matthew: The Sending Out of the Twelve—Matt. 9: 35—11:1; Mk. 6: 6b-13; Lk. 9: 1-6***

***Matt. 9:35-38***

Jesus was going through all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues and proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness.<sup>36</sup> Seeing the people, He felt compassion for them, because they were distressed and dispirited like sheep without a shepherd.<sup>37</sup> Then He said to His disciples, "The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few."<sup>38</sup> "Therefore beseech the Lord of the harvest to send out workers into His harvest." (Matthew 9: 35-38 NASB)

***Matt. 10: 1-42***

Jesus summoned His twelve disciples and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal every kind of disease and every kind of sickness.<sup>2</sup> Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; and James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;<sup>3</sup> Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax collector; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus;<sup>4</sup> Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, the one who betrayed Him.<sup>5</sup> These twelve Jesus sent out after instructing them: "Do not go in *the way of the* Gentiles, and do not enter *any* city of the Samaritans;<sup>6</sup> but rather go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.<sup>7</sup> "And as you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of heaven is at hand.'<sup>8</sup> "Heal *the* sick, raise *the* dead, cleanse *the* lepers, cast out demons. Freely you received, freely give.<sup>9</sup> "Do not acquire gold, or silver, or copper for your money belts,<sup>10</sup> or a bag for *your* journey, or even two coats, or sandals, or a staff; for the worker is worthy of his support.<sup>11</sup> "And whatever city or village you enter, inquire who is worthy in it, and stay at his house until you leave *that* city.<sup>12</sup> "As you enter the house, give it your greeting.<sup>13</sup> "If the house is worthy, give it your *blessing of* peace. But if it is not worthy, take back your *blessing of* peace.<sup>14</sup> "Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet.<sup>15</sup> "Truly I say to you, it will be more tolerable for *the* land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city.<sup>16</sup> "Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves; so be shrewd as serpents and innocent as doves.<sup>17</sup> "But beware of men, for they will hand you over to *the* courts and scourge you in their synagogues;<sup>18</sup> and you will even be brought before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them and to the Gentiles.<sup>19</sup> "But when they hand you over, do not worry about how or what you are to say; for it will be given you in that hour what you are to say.<sup>20</sup> "For it is not you who speak, but *it is* the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you.<sup>21</sup> "Brother will betray brother to death, and a father *his* child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death.<sup>22</sup> "You will be hated by all because of My name, but it is the one who has endured to the end who will be saved.<sup>23</sup> "But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee to the next; for truly I say to you, you will not finish *going through* the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes.<sup>24</sup> "A disciple is not above his teacher, nor a slave above his master.<sup>25</sup> "It

is enough for the disciple that he become like his teacher, and the slave like his master. If they have called the head of the house Beelzebul, how much more *will they malign* the members of his household!<sup>26</sup> "Therefore do not fear them, for there is nothing concealed that will not be revealed, or hidden that will not be known."<sup>27</sup> "What I tell you in the darkness, speak in the light; and what you hear *whispered* in *your* ear, proclaim upon the housetops."<sup>28</sup> "Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul; but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell."<sup>29</sup> "Are not two sparrows sold for a cent? And *yet* not one of them will fall to the ground apart from your Father."<sup>30</sup> "But the very hairs of your head are all numbered."<sup>31</sup> "So do not fear; you are more valuable than many sparrows."<sup>32</sup> "Therefore everyone who confesses Me before men, I will also confess him before My Father who is in heaven."<sup>33</sup> "But whoever denies Me before men, I will also deny him before My Father who is in heaven."<sup>34</sup> "Do not think that I came to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword."<sup>35</sup> "For I came to SET A MAN AGAINST HIS FATHER, AND A DAUGHTER AGAINST HER MOTHER, AND A DAUGHTER-IN-LAW AGAINST HER MOTHER-IN-LAW;<sup>36</sup> and A MAN'S ENEMIES WILL BE THE MEMBERS OF HIS HOUSEHOLD."<sup>37</sup> "He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me."<sup>38</sup> "And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me."<sup>39</sup> "He who has found his life will lose it, and he who has lost his life for My sake will find it."<sup>40</sup> "He who receives you receives Me, and he who receives Me receives Him who sent Me."<sup>41</sup> "He who receives a prophet in *the* name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he who receives a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward."<sup>42</sup> "And whoever in the name of a disciple gives to one of these little ones even a cup of cold water to drink, truly I say to you, he shall not lose his reward." (Matthew 10: 1-42 NASB)

***Matt. 11: 1***

When Jesus had finished giving instructions to His twelve disciples, He departed from there to teach and preach in their cities. (Matthew 11: 1 NASB)

***Mk. 6: 6b-13***

And He was going around the villages teaching.<sup>7</sup> And He summoned the twelve and began to send them out in pairs, and gave them authority over the unclean spirits;<sup>8</sup> and He instructed them that they should take nothing for *their* journey, except a mere staff-- no bread, no bag, no money in their belt--<sup>9</sup> but *to* wear sandals; and *He added*, "Do not put on two tunics."<sup>10</sup> And He said to them, "Wherever you enter a house, stay there until you leave town."<sup>11</sup> "Any place that does not receive you or listen to you, as you go out from there, shake the dust off the soles of your feet for a testimony against them."<sup>12</sup> They went out and preached that *men* should repent.<sup>13</sup> And they were casting out many demons and were anointing with oil many sick people and healing them. (Mark 6:6b-13 NASB)

***Lk. 9:1-6***

And He called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all the demons and to heal diseases.<sup>2</sup> And He sent them out to proclaim the kingdom of God and to perform healing.<sup>3</sup> And He said to them, "Take nothing for *your* journey, neither a staff, nor a bag, nor bread, nor money; and do not *even* have two tunics apiece."<sup>4</sup> "Whatever house you enter, stay there until you leave that city."<sup>5</sup> "And as for those who do not receive you, as you go out from that city, shake the dust off your feet as a testimony against them."<sup>6</sup> Departing, they *began* going throughout the villages, preaching the gospel and healing everywhere. (Luke 9:1-6 NASB)

### ***IX. The Year of Opposition—The Later Galilean Ministry***

#### ***A. Herod “Haunted” by John the Baptist whom he Beheaded—Matt. 14: 1-2; Mk. 6: 14-29; Lk. 9: 7-9***

##### ***Matt. 14: 1-2***

At that time Herod the tetrarch heard the news about Jesus,<sup>2</sup> and said to his servants, "This is John the Baptist; he has risen from the dead, and that is why miraculous powers are at work in him." (Matthew 14:1-2 NASB)

##### ***Mk. 6: 14-29***

And King Herod heard *of it*, for His name had become well known; and *people* were saying, "John the Baptist has risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are at work in Him."<sup>15</sup> But others were saying, "He is Elijah." And others were saying, "*He is a prophet, like one of the prophets of old.*"<sup>16</sup> But when Herod heard *of it*, he kept saying, "John, whom I beheaded, has risen!"<sup>17</sup> For Herod himself had sent and had John arrested and bound in prison on account of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip, because he had married her.<sup>18</sup> For John had been saying to Herod, "It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife."<sup>19</sup> Herodias had a grudge against him and wanted to put him to death and could not *do so*;<sup>20</sup> for Herod was afraid of John, knowing that he was a righteous and holy man, and he kept him safe. And when he heard him, he was very perplexed; but he used to enjoy listening to him.<sup>21</sup> A strategic day came when Herod on his birthday gave a banquet for his lords and military commanders and the leading men of Galilee;<sup>22</sup> and when the daughter of Herodias herself came in and danced, she pleased Herod and his dinner guests; and the king said to the girl, "Ask me for whatever you want and I will give it to you."<sup>23</sup> And he swore to her, "Whatever you ask of me, I will give it to you; up to half of my kingdom."<sup>24</sup> And she went out and said to her mother, "What shall I ask for?" And she said, "The head of John the Baptist."<sup>25</sup> Immediately she came in a hurry to the king and asked, saying, "I want you to give me at once the head of John the Baptist on a platter."<sup>26</sup> And although the king was very sorry, *yet* because of his oaths and because of his dinner guests, he was unwilling to refuse her.<sup>27</sup> Immediately the king sent an executioner and commanded *him* to bring *back* his head. And he went and had him beheaded in the prison,<sup>28</sup> and brought his head on a platter, and gave it to the girl; and the girl gave it to her mother.<sup>29</sup> When his disciples heard *about this*, they came and took away his body and laid it in a tomb. (Mark 6:14-29 NASB)

##### ***Lk. 9: 7-9***

Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was happening; and he was greatly perplexed, because it was said by some that John had risen from the dead,<sup>8</sup> and by some that Elijah had appeared, and by others that one of the prophets of old had risen again.<sup>9</sup> Herod said, "I myself had John beheaded; but who is this man about whom I hear such things?" And he kept trying to see Him. (Luke 9:7-9 NASB)

#### ***B. The Feeding of the Five Thousand—Matt. 14: 13-21; Mk. 6: 30-44; Lk. 9: 10-17; Jn. 6: 1-14***

##### ***Matt. 14: 13-21***

Now when Jesus heard *about John*, He withdrew from there in a boat to a secluded place by Himself; and when the people heard *of this*, they followed Him on foot from the cities.<sup>14</sup> When He went ashore, He saw a large crowd, and felt compassion for them and healed their sick.<sup>15</sup> When it was evening, the disciples came to Him and said, "This place is desolate and the hour is already late; so send the crowds away, that they may go into the villages and buy food for themselves."<sup>16</sup> But Jesus said to them, "They do not need to go away; you give them *something* to eat!"<sup>17</sup> They said to Him,

"We have here only five loaves and two fish."<sup>18</sup> And He said, "Bring them here to Me."<sup>19</sup> Ordering the people to sit down on the grass, He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up toward heaven, He blessed *the food*, and breaking the loaves He gave them to the disciples, and the disciples *gave them* to the crowds,<sup>20</sup> **and they all ate and were satisfied**. They picked up what was left over of the broken pieces, twelve full baskets.<sup>21</sup> There were about five thousand men who ate, besides women and children. (Matthew 14:13-21 NASB)

**Mk. 6: 30-44**

The apostles gathered together with Jesus; and they reported to Him all that they had done and taught.<sup>31</sup> And He said to them, "Come away by yourselves to a secluded place and rest a while." (For there were many *people* coming and going, and they did not even have time to eat.)<sup>32</sup> They went away in the boat to a secluded place by themselves.<sup>33</sup> *The people* saw them going, and many recognized *them* and ran there together on foot from all the cities, and got there ahead of them.<sup>34</sup> When Jesus went ashore, He saw a large crowd, and He felt compassion for them because they were like sheep without a shepherd; and He began to teach them many things.<sup>35</sup> When it was already quite late, His disciples came to Him and said, "This place is desolate and it is already quite late;<sup>36</sup> send them away so that they may go into the surrounding countryside and villages and buy themselves something to eat."<sup>37</sup> But He answered them, "You give them *something* to eat!" And they said to Him, "Shall we go and spend two hundred denarii on bread and give them *something* to eat?"<sup>38</sup> And He said to them, "How many loaves do you have? Go look!" And when they found out, they said, "Five, and two fish."<sup>39</sup> And He commanded them all to sit down by groups on the green grass.<sup>40</sup> They sat down in groups of hundreds and of fifties.<sup>41</sup> And He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up toward heaven, He blessed *the food* and broke the loaves and He kept giving *them* to the disciples to set before them; and He divided up the two fish among them all.<sup>42</sup> **They all ate and were satisfied**,<sup>43</sup> and they picked up twelve full baskets of the broken pieces, and also of the fish.<sup>44</sup> There were five thousand men who ate the loaves. (Mark 6:30-44 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 10-17**

When the apostles returned, they gave an account to Him of all that they had done. Taking them with Him, He withdrew by Himself to a city called Bethsaida.<sup>11</sup> But the crowds were aware of this and followed Him; and welcoming them, He *began* speaking to them about the kingdom of God and curing those who had need of healing.<sup>12</sup> Now the day was ending, and the twelve came and said to Him, "Send the crowd away, that they may go into the surrounding villages and countryside and find lodging and get something to eat; for here we are in a desolate place."<sup>13</sup> But He said to them, "You give them *something* to eat!" And they said, "We have no more than five loaves and two fish, unless perhaps we go and buy food for all these people."<sup>14</sup> (For there were about five thousand men.) And He said to His disciples, "Have them sit down *to eat* in groups of about fifty each."<sup>15</sup> They did so, and had them all sit down.<sup>16</sup> Then He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up to heaven, He blessed them, and broke *them*, and kept giving *them* to the disciples to set before the people.<sup>17</sup> **And they all ate and were satisfied**; and the broken pieces which they had left over were picked up, twelve baskets *full*. (Luke 9:10-17 NASB)

**Jn. 6: 1-14**

After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the Sea of Galilee (or Tiberias).<sup>2</sup> A large crowd followed Him, **because they saw the signs which He was performing on those who were sick**.<sup>3</sup> Then Jesus went up on the mountain, and there He sat down with His disciples.<sup>4</sup> Now the Passover, the feast of the Jews, was near.<sup>5</sup> Therefore Jesus, lifting up His eyes and seeing that a large

crowd was coming to Him, said to Philip, "Where are we to buy bread, so that these may eat?"<sup>6</sup> This He was saying to test him, for He Himself knew what He was intending to do.<sup>7</sup> Philip answered Him, "Two hundred denarii worth of bread is not sufficient for them, for everyone to receive a little."<sup>8</sup> One of His disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, said to Him,<sup>9</sup> "There is a lad here who has five barley loaves and two fish, but what are these for so many people?"<sup>10</sup> Jesus said, "Have the people sit down." Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.<sup>11</sup> Jesus then took the loaves, and having given thanks, He distributed to those who were seated; likewise also of the fish as much as they wanted.<sup>12</sup> **When they were filled**, He said to His disciples, "Gather up the leftover fragments so that nothing will be lost."<sup>13</sup> So they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with fragments from the five barley loaves which were left over by those who had eaten.<sup>14</sup> Therefore **when the people saw the sign which He had performed**, they said, "This is truly the Prophet who is to come into the world." (John 6:1-14 NASB)

*C. Jesus Walks on the Sea— Matt. 14: 22-36; Mk. 6: 45-56; Jn. 6: 15-21*

***Matt. 14: 22-36***

Immediately He made the disciples get into the boat and go ahead of Him to the other side, while He sent the crowds away.<sup>23</sup> After He had sent the crowds away, He went up on the mountain by Himself to pray; and when it was evening, He was there alone.<sup>24</sup> But the boat was already a long distance from the land, battered by the waves; for the wind was contrary.<sup>25</sup> And in the fourth watch of the night He came to them, walking on the sea.<sup>26</sup> When the disciples saw Him walking on the sea, they were terrified, and said, "It is a ghost!" And they cried out in fear.<sup>27</sup> But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, "Take courage, it is I; do not be afraid."<sup>28</sup> Peter said to Him, "Lord, if it is You, command me to come to You on the water."<sup>29</sup> And He said, "Come!" And Peter got out of the boat, and walked on the water and came toward Jesus.<sup>30</sup> But seeing the wind, he became frightened, and beginning to sink, he cried out, "Lord, save me!"<sup>31</sup> Immediately Jesus stretched out His hand and took hold of him, and said to him, "**You of little faith, why did you doubt?**"<sup>32</sup> When they got into the boat, the wind stopped.<sup>33</sup> And those who were in the boat worshiped Him, saying, "You are certainly God's Son!"<sup>34</sup> When they had crossed over, they came to land at Gennesaret.<sup>35</sup> And when the men of that place recognized Him, they sent *word* into all that surrounding district and brought to Him all who were sick;<sup>36</sup> and they implored Him that they might just touch the fringe of His cloak; and as many as touched *it* were cured. (Matthew 14:22-36 NASB)

***Mk. 6: 45-56***

Immediately Jesus made His disciples get into the boat and go ahead of *Him* to the other side to Bethsaida, while He Himself was sending the crowd away.<sup>46</sup> After bidding them farewell, He left for the mountain to pray.<sup>47</sup> When it was evening, the boat was in the middle of the sea, and He was alone on the land.<sup>48</sup> Seeing them straining at the oars, for the wind was against them, at about the fourth watch of the night He came to them, walking on the sea; and He intended to pass by them.<sup>49</sup> But when they saw Him walking on the sea, they supposed that it was a ghost, and cried out;<sup>50</sup> for they all saw Him and were terrified. But immediately He spoke with them and said to them, "Take courage; it is I, do not be afraid."<sup>51</sup> Then He got into the boat with them, and the wind stopped; and they were utterly astonished,<sup>52</sup> **for they had not gained any insight from the *incident of the loaves, but their heart was hardened.***<sup>53</sup> When they had crossed over they came to land at Gennesaret, and moored to the shore.<sup>54</sup> When they got out of the boat, immediately *the people* recognized Him,<sup>55</sup> and ran about that whole country and began to carry here and there on their pallets those who were sick, to the place

they heard He was.<sup>56</sup> Wherever He entered villages, or cities, or countryside, they were laying the sick in the market places, and imploring Him that they might just touch the fringe of His cloak; and as many as touched it were being cured. (Mark 6:45-56 NASB)

***Jn. 6: 15-21***

So Jesus, perceiving that they were intending to come and take Him by force to make Him king, withdrew again to the mountain by Himself alone.<sup>16</sup> Now when evening came, His disciples went down to the sea,<sup>17</sup> and after getting into a boat, they *started to* cross the sea to Capernaum. It had already become dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them.<sup>18</sup> The sea *began* to be stirred up because a strong wind was blowing.<sup>19</sup> Then, when they had rowed about three or four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the sea and drawing near to the boat; and they were frightened.<sup>20</sup> But He said to them, "It is I; do not be afraid."<sup>21</sup> So they were willing to receive Him into the boat, and immediately the boat was at the land to which they were going. (John 6:15-21 NASB)

***E. Jesus' Teaching Concerning the Traditions of Men—Matt. 15: 1-20; Mk. 7: 1-23***

***Matt. 15: 1-20***

Then some Pharisees and scribes came to Jesus from Jerusalem and said,<sup>2</sup> "Why do Your disciples break the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands when they eat bread."<sup>3</sup> And He answered and said to them, "Why do you yourselves transgress the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition?"<sup>4</sup> "For God said, 'HONOR YOUR FATHER AND MOTHER,' and, 'HE WHO SPEAKS EVIL OF FATHER OR MOTHER IS TO BE PUT TO DEATH.'<sup>5</sup> "But you say, 'Whoever says to *his* father or mother, "Whatever I have that would help you has been given *to God*,"<sup>6</sup> he is not to honor his father or his mother.' And *by this* you invalidated the word of God for the sake of your tradition."<sup>7</sup> "You hypocrites, rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you:<sup>8</sup> "THIS PEOPLE HONORS ME WITH THEIR LIPS, BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR AWAY FROM ME."<sup>9</sup> "BUT IN VAIN DO THEY WORSHIP ME, TEACHING AS DOCTRINES THE PRECEPTS OF MEN."<sup>10</sup> After Jesus called the crowd to Him, He said to them, "Hear and understand."<sup>11</sup> "*It is* not what enters into the mouth *that* defiles the man, but what proceeds out of the mouth, this defiles the man."<sup>12</sup> Then the disciples came and said to Him, "Do You know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this statement?"<sup>13</sup> But He answered and said, "Every plant which My heavenly Father did not plant shall be uprooted.<sup>14</sup> "Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit."<sup>15</sup> Peter said to Him, "Explain the parable to us."<sup>16</sup> Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also?"<sup>17</sup> "Do you not understand that everything that goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is eliminated?"<sup>18</sup> "But the things that proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and those defile the man."<sup>19</sup> "For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders."<sup>20</sup> "These are the things which defile the man; but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile the man." (Matthew 15:1-20 NASB)

***Mk. 7: 1-23***

The Pharisees and some of the scribes gathered around Him when they had come from Jerusalem,<sup>2</sup> and had seen that some of His disciples were eating their bread with impure hands, that is, unwashed.<sup>3</sup> (For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they carefully wash their hands, *thus* observing the traditions of the elders;<sup>4</sup> and *when they come* from the market place, they do not eat unless they cleanse themselves; and there are many other things which they have received in order to observe, such as the washing of cups and pitchers and copper pots.)<sup>5</sup> The Pharisees and the scribes asked Him,

"Why do Your disciples not walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat their bread with impure hands?"<sup>6</sup> And He said to them, "Rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: 'THIS PEOPLE HONORS ME WITH THEIR LIPS, BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR AWAY FROM ME.'<sup>7</sup> 'BUT IN VAIN DO THEY WORSHIP ME, TEACHING AS DOCTRINES THE PRECEPTS OF MEN.'<sup>8</sup> "Neglecting the commandment of God, you hold to the tradition of men."<sup>9</sup> He was also saying to them, "You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition."<sup>10</sup> "For Moses said, 'HONOR YOUR FATHER AND YOUR MOTHER'; and, 'HE WHO SPEAKS EVIL OF FATHER OR MOTHER, IS TO BE PUT TO DEATH';<sup>11</sup> but you say, 'If a man says to *his* father or *his* mother, whatever I have that would help you is Corban (that is to say, given to God),'<sup>12</sup> you no longer permit him to do anything for *his* father or *his* mother;<sup>13</sup> *thus* invalidating the word of God by your tradition which you have handed down; and you do many things such as that."<sup>14</sup> After He called the crowd to Him again, He *began* saying to them, "Listen to Me, all of you, and understand:<sup>15</sup> there is nothing outside the man which can defile him if it goes into him; but the things which proceed out of the man are what defile the man."<sup>16</sup> "If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear."<sup>17</sup> When he had left the crowd *and* entered the house, His disciples questioned Him about the parable.<sup>18</sup> And He said to them, "Are you so lacking in understanding also? Do you not understand that whatever goes into the man from outside cannot defile him,<sup>19</sup> because it does not go into his heart, but into his stomach, and is eliminated?" (*Thus He* declared all foods clean.)<sup>20</sup> And He was saying, "That which proceeds out of the man, that is what defiles the man."<sup>21</sup> "For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed the evil thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries,<sup>22</sup> deeds of coveting *and* wickedness, *as well as* deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride *and* foolishness.<sup>23</sup> "All these evil things proceed from within and defile the man." (Mark 7:1-23 NASB)

### ***F. The Syrophenician Woman—Matt. 15: 21-28; Mk.7: 24-30***

#### ***Matt. 15: 21-28***

Jesus went away from there, and withdrew into the district of Tyre and Sidon.<sup>22</sup> And a Canaanite woman from that region came out and *began* to cry out, saying, "Have mercy on me, Lord, Son of David; my daughter is cruelly demon-possessed."<sup>23</sup> But He did not answer her a word. And His disciples came and implored Him, saying, "Send her away, because she keeps shouting at us."<sup>24</sup> But He answered and said, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."<sup>25</sup> But she came and *began* to bow down before Him, saying, "Lord, help me!"<sup>26</sup> And He answered and said, "It is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs."<sup>27</sup> But she said, "Yes, Lord; but even the dogs feed on the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."<sup>28</sup> Then Jesus said to her, "O woman, your faith is great; it shall be done for you as you wish." And her daughter was healed at once. (Matthew 15:21-28 NASB)

#### ***Mk.7: 24-30***

Jesus got up and went away from there to the region of Tyre. And when He had entered a house, He wanted no one to know *of it*; yet He could not escape notice.<sup>25</sup> But after hearing of Him, a woman whose little daughter had an unclean spirit immediately came and fell at His feet.<sup>26</sup> Now the woman was a Gentile, of the Syrophenician race. And she kept asking Him to cast the demon out of her daughter.<sup>27</sup> And He was saying to her, "Let the children be satisfied first, for it is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs."<sup>28</sup> But she answered and said to Him, "Yes, Lord, *but* even the dogs under the table feed on the children's crumbs."<sup>29</sup> And He said to her, "Because of this

answer go; the demon has gone out of your daughter." <sup>30</sup> And going back to her home, she found the child lying on the bed, the demon having left. (Mark 7:24-30 NASB)

**G. The Deaf and Dumb Man and other Miracles—Matt. 15: 29-31; Mk. 7: 31-37**

**Matt. 15: 29-31**

Departing from there, Jesus went along by the Sea of Galilee, and having gone up on the mountain, He was sitting there. <sup>30</sup> And large crowds came to Him, bringing with them *those who were* lame, crippled, blind, mute, and many others, and they laid them down at His feet; and He healed them. <sup>31</sup> So the crowd marveled as they saw the mute speaking, the crippled restored, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing; and they glorified the God of Israel. (Matthew 15:29-31 NASB)

**Mk. 7: 31-37**

Again He went out from the region of Tyre, and came through Sidon to the Sea of Galilee, within the region of Decapolis. <sup>32</sup> They brought to Him one who was deaf and spoke with difficulty, and they implored Him to lay His hand on him. <sup>33</sup> Jesus took him aside from the crowd, by himself, and put His fingers into his ears, and after spitting, He touched his tongue *with the saliva*; <sup>34</sup> and looking up to heaven with a deep sigh, He said to him, "Ephphatha!" that is, "Be opened!" <sup>35</sup> And his ears were opened, and the impediment of his tongue was removed, and he *began* speaking plainly. <sup>36</sup> And He gave them orders not to tell anyone; but the more He ordered them, the more widely they continued to proclaim it. <sup>37</sup> They were utterly astonished, saying, "He has done all things well; He makes even the deaf to hear and the mute to speak." (Mark 7:31-37 NASB)

**H. The Feeding of the Four Thousand—Matt. 15: 32-39; Mk. 8: 1-10**

**Matt. 15: 32-39**

And Jesus called His disciples to Him, and said, "I feel compassion for the people, because they have remained with Me now three days and have nothing to eat; and I do not want to send them away hungry, for they might faint on the way." <sup>33</sup> The disciples said to Him, "Where would we get so many loaves in *this* desolate place to satisfy such a large crowd?" <sup>34</sup> And Jesus said to them, "How many loaves do you have?" And they said, "Seven, and a few small fish." <sup>35</sup> And He directed the people to sit down on the ground; <sup>36</sup> and He took the seven loaves and the fish; and giving thanks, He broke them and started giving them to the disciples, and the disciples *gave them* to the people. <sup>37</sup> And they all ate and were satisfied, and they picked up what was left over of the broken pieces, seven large baskets full. <sup>38</sup> And those who ate were four thousand men, besides women and children. <sup>39</sup> And sending away the crowds, Jesus got into the boat and came to the region of Magadan. (Matthew 15:32-39 NASB)

**Mk. 8: 1-10**

In those days, when there was again a large crowd and they had nothing to eat, Jesus called His disciples and said to them, <sup>2</sup> "I feel compassion for the people because they have remained with Me now three days and have nothing to eat. <sup>3</sup> "If I send them away hungry to their homes, they will faint on the way; and some of them have come from a great distance." <sup>4</sup> And His disciples answered Him, "Where will anyone be able *to find enough* bread here in *this* desolate place to satisfy these people?" <sup>5</sup> And He was asking them, "How many loaves do you have?" And they said, "Seven." <sup>6</sup> And He directed the people to sit down on the ground; and taking the seven loaves, He gave thanks and broke them, and started giving them to His disciples to serve to them, and they served them to the people. <sup>7</sup>



They also had a few small fish; and after He had blessed them, He ordered these to be served as well.<sup>8</sup> And they ate and were satisfied; and they picked up seven large baskets full of what was left over of the broken pieces.<sup>9</sup> About four thousand were *there*; and He sent them away.<sup>10</sup> And immediately He entered the boat with His disciples and came to the district of Dalmanutha. (Mark 8:1-10 NASB)

***I. The Pharisees and Sadducees Seek for a Sign—Matt. 16: 1-12; Mk. 8: 11-21***

***Matt. 16: 1-12***

The Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and testing Jesus, they asked Him to show them a sign from heaven.<sup>2</sup> But He replied to them, "When it is evening, you say, '*It will be fair weather, for the sky is red.*'"<sup>3</sup> "And in the morning, '*There will be a storm today, for the sky is red and threatening.*' Do you know how to discern the appearance of the sky, but cannot *discern* the signs of the times?"<sup>4</sup> "An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and a sign will not be given it, except the sign of Jonah." And He left them and went away.<sup>5</sup> And the disciples came to the other side *of the sea*, but they had forgotten to bring *any* bread.<sup>6</sup> And Jesus said to them, "Watch out and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees."<sup>7</sup> They began to discuss *this* among themselves, saying, "*He said that because we did not bring any bread.*"<sup>8</sup> But Jesus, aware of this, said, "You men of little faith, why do you discuss among yourselves that you have no bread?"<sup>9</sup> "Do you not yet understand or remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets *full* you picked up?"<sup>10</sup> "Or the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many large baskets *full* you picked up?"<sup>11</sup> "How is it that you do not understand that I did not speak to you concerning bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees."<sup>12</sup> Then they understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees. (Matthew 16:1-12 NASB)

***Mk. 8: 11-21***

The Pharisees came out and began to argue with Him, seeking from Him a sign from heaven, to test Him.<sup>12</sup> Sighing deeply in His spirit, He said, "Why does this generation seek for a sign? Truly I say to you, no sign will be given to this generation."<sup>13</sup> Leaving them, He again embarked and went away to the other side.<sup>14</sup> And they had forgotten to take bread, and did not have more than one loaf in the boat with them.<sup>15</sup> And He was giving orders to them, saying, "Watch out! Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod."<sup>16</sup> They *began* to discuss with one another *the fact* that they had no bread.<sup>17</sup> And Jesus, aware of this, said to them, "Why do you discuss *the fact* that you have no bread? Do you not yet see or understand? Do you have a hardened heart?"<sup>18</sup> "HAVING EYES, DO YOU NOT SEE? AND HAVING EARS, DO YOU NOT HEAR? And do you not remember,<sup>19</sup> when I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces you picked up?" They said to Him, "Twelve."<sup>20</sup> "When *I broke* the seven for the four thousand, how many large baskets full of broken pieces did you pick up?" And they said to Him, "Seven."<sup>21</sup> And He was saying to them, "Do you not yet understand?" (Mark 8:11-21 NASB)

***K. Peter's Confession—Matt. 16: 13-20; Mk. 8: 27-30; Lk. 9: 18-21***

***Matt. 16: 13-20***

Now when Jesus came into the district of Caesarea Philippi, He was asking His disciples, "Who do people say that the Son of Man is?"<sup>14</sup> And they said, "Some *say* John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; but still others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets."<sup>15</sup> He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?"<sup>16</sup> Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."<sup>17</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal *this* to you, but My Father

who is in heaven.<sup>18</sup> "I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades will not overpower it.<sup>19</sup> "I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven."<sup>20</sup> Then He warned the disciples that they should tell no one that He was the Christ. (Matthew 16:13-20 NASB)

***Mk. 8: 27-30***

Jesus went out, along with His disciples, to the villages of Caesarea Philippi; and on the way He questioned His disciples, saying to them, "Who do people say that I am?"<sup>28</sup> They told Him, saying, "John the Baptist; and others *say* Elijah; but others, one of the prophets."<sup>29</sup> And He *continued* by questioning them, "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered and said to Him, "You are the Christ."<sup>30</sup> And He warned them to tell no one about Him. (Mark 8:27-30 NASB)

***Lk. 9: 18-21***

And it happened that while He was praying alone, the disciples were with Him, and He questioned them, saying, "Who do the people say that I am?"<sup>19</sup> They answered and said, "John the Baptist, and others *say* Elijah; but others, that one of the prophets of old has risen again."<sup>20</sup> And He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" And Peter answered and said, "The Christ of God."<sup>21</sup> But He warned them and instructed *them* not to tell this to anyone, (Luke 9:18-21 NASB)

***L. Jesus Foretells His Death and Second Coming; Peter's Recession—Matt. 16: 21-28; Mk. 8: 31—9:1; Lk. 9: 22-27***

***Matt. 16: 21-28***

From that time Jesus began to show His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised up on the third day.<sup>22</sup> Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "God forbid *it*, Lord! This shall never happen to You."<sup>23</sup> But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."<sup>24</sup> Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me.<sup>25</sup> "For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it; but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it.<sup>26</sup> "For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world and forfeits his soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?<sup>27</sup> "For the Son of Man is going to come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and WILL THEN REPAY EVERY MAN ACCORDING TO HIS DEEDS.<sup>28</sup> "Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who will not taste death until they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." (Matthew 16:21-28 NASB)

***Mk. 8: 31—9:1***

And He began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders and the chief priests and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.<sup>32</sup> And He was stating the matter plainly. And Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him.<sup>33</sup> But turning around and seeing His disciples, He rebuked Peter and said, "Get behind Me, Satan; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."<sup>34</sup> And He summoned the crowd with His disciples, and said to them, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me.<sup>35</sup> "For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and the gospel's will save it.<sup>36</sup> "For what does it profit a man to gain the whole world, and forfeit

his soul?<sup>37</sup> "For what will a man give in exchange for his soul?<sup>38</sup> "For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will also be ashamed of him when He comes in the glory of His Father with the holy angels."

And Jesus was saying to them, "Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who will not taste death until they see the kingdom of God after it has come with power." (Mark 8:31—9:1 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 22-27**

saying, "The Son of Man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed and be raised up on the third day."<sup>23</sup> And He was saying to *them* all, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross daily and follow Me."<sup>24</sup> "For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake, he is the one who will save it."<sup>25</sup> "For what is a man profited if he gains the whole world, and loses or forfeits himself?"<sup>26</sup> "For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when He comes in His glory, and *the glory* of the Father and of the holy angels."<sup>27</sup> "But I say to you truthfully, there are some of those standing here who will not taste death until they see the kingdom of God." (Luke 9:22-27 NASB)

**M. The Transfiguration—Matt. 17: 1-13; Mk. 9: 2-13; Lk. 9: 28-36**

**Matt. 17: 1-13**

Six days later Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up on a high mountain by themselves.<sup>2</sup> And He was transfigured before them; and His face shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light.<sup>3</sup> And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him.<sup>4</sup> Peter said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, I will make three tabernacles here, one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah."<sup>5</sup> While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed them, and behold, a voice out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!"<sup>6</sup> When the disciples heard *this*, they fell face down to the ground and were terrified.<sup>7</sup> And Jesus came to *them* and touched them and said, "Get up, and do not be afraid."<sup>8</sup> And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one except Jesus Himself alone.<sup>9</sup> As they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, "Tell the vision to no one until the Son of Man has risen from the dead."<sup>10</sup> And His disciples asked Him, "Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?"<sup>11</sup> And He answered and said, "Elijah is coming and will restore all things;<sup>12</sup> but I say to you that Elijah already came, and they did not recognize him, but did to him whatever they wished. So also the Son of Man is going to suffer at their hands."<sup>13</sup> Then the disciples understood that He had spoken to them about John the Baptist. (Matthew 17:1-13 NASB)

**Mk. 9: 2-13**

Six days later, Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John, and brought them up on a high mountain by themselves. And He was transfigured before them;<sup>3</sup> and His garments became radiant and exceedingly white, as no launderer on earth can whiten them.<sup>4</sup> Elijah appeared to them along with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus.<sup>5</sup> Peter said to Jesus, "Rabbi, it is good for us to be here; let us make three tabernacles, one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah."<sup>6</sup> For he did not know what to answer; for they became terrified.<sup>7</sup> Then a cloud formed, overshadowing them, and a voice came out of the cloud, "This is My beloved Son, listen to Him!"<sup>8</sup> All at once they looked around and saw no one with them anymore, except Jesus alone.<sup>9</sup> As they were coming down from the mountain, He gave them orders not to relate to anyone what they had seen, until the Son of Man rose from the dead.<sup>10</sup> They seized upon that statement, discussing with one another what rising from the

dead meant.<sup>11</sup> They asked Him, saying, "Why is it that the scribes say that Elijah must come first?"<sup>12</sup> And He said to them, "Elijah does first come and restore all things. And yet how is it written of the Son of Man that He will suffer many things and be treated with contempt?"<sup>13</sup> "But I say to you that Elijah has indeed come, and they did to him whatever they wished, just as it is written of him." (Mark 9:2-13 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 28-36**

Some eight days after these sayings, He took along Peter and John and James, and went up on the mountain to pray.<sup>29</sup> And while He was praying, the appearance of His face became different, and His clothing became white and gleaming.<sup>30</sup> And behold, two men were talking with Him; and they were Moses and Elijah,<sup>31</sup> who, appearing in glory, were speaking of His departure which He was about to accomplish at Jerusalem.<sup>32</sup> Now Peter and his companions had been overcome with sleep; but when they were fully awake, they saw His glory and the two men standing with Him.<sup>33</sup> And as these were leaving Him, Peter said to Jesus, "Master, it is good for us to be here; let us make three tabernacles: one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah" -- not realizing what he was saying.<sup>34</sup> While he was saying this, a cloud formed and began to overshadow them; and they were afraid as they entered the cloud.<sup>35</sup> Then a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My Son, My Chosen One; listen to Him!"<sup>36</sup> And when the voice had spoken, Jesus was found alone. And they kept silent, and reported to no one in those days any of the things which they had seen. (Luke 9:28-36 NASB)

**N. The Healing of the Demoniac—Matt. 17: 14-21; Mk. 9: 14-29; Lk. 9: 37-43a**

**Matt. 17: 14-21**

When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, falling on his knees before Him and saying,<sup>15</sup> "Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is a lunatic and is very ill; for he often falls into the fire and often into the water."<sup>16</sup> "I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him."<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered and said, "You unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him here to Me."<sup>18</sup> And Jesus rebuked him, and the demon came out of him, and the boy was cured at once.<sup>19</sup> Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said, "Why could we not drive it out?"<sup>20</sup> And He said to them, "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible to you."<sup>21</sup> "But this kind does not go out except by prayer and fasting." (Matthew 17:14-21 NASB)

**Mk. 9: 14-29**

When they came back to the disciples, they saw a large crowd around them, and some scribes arguing with them.<sup>15</sup> Immediately, when the entire crowd saw Him, they were amazed and began running up to greet Him.<sup>16</sup> And He asked them, "What are you discussing with them?"<sup>17</sup> And one of the crowd answered Him, "Teacher, I brought You my son, possessed with a spirit which makes him mute;<sup>18</sup> and whenever it seizes him, it slams him to the ground and he foams at the mouth, and grinds his teeth and stiffens out. I told Your disciples to cast it out, and they could not do it."<sup>19</sup> And He answered them and said, "O unbelieving generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him to Me!"<sup>20</sup> They brought the boy to Him. When he saw Him, immediately the spirit threw him into a convulsion, and falling to the ground, he began rolling around and foaming at the mouth.<sup>21</sup> And He asked his father, "How long has this been happening to him?" And he said, "From childhood."<sup>22</sup> "It has often thrown him both into the fire and into the water to destroy him. But

if You can do anything, take pity on us and help us!"<sup>23</sup> And Jesus said to him, "If You can?' All things are possible to him who believes."<sup>24</sup> Immediately the boy's father cried out and said, "I do believe; help my unbelief."<sup>25</sup> When Jesus saw that a crowd was rapidly gathering, He rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it, "You deaf and mute spirit, I command you, come out of him and do not enter him again."<sup>26</sup> After crying out and throwing him into terrible convulsions, it came out; and *the boy* became so much like a corpse that most of *them* said, "He is dead!"<sup>27</sup> But Jesus took him by the hand and raised him; and he got up.<sup>28</sup> When He came into *the house*, His disciples *began* questioning Him privately, "Why could we not drive it out?"<sup>29</sup> And He said to them, "This kind cannot come out by anything but prayer." (Mark 9:14-29 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 37-43a**

On the next day, when they came down from the mountain, a large crowd met Him.<sup>38</sup> And a man from the crowd shouted, saying, "Teacher, I beg You to look at my son, for he is my only *boy*,<sup>39</sup> and a spirit seizes him, and he suddenly screams, and it throws him into a convulsion with foaming *at the mouth*; and only with difficulty does it leave him, mauling him *as it leaves*."<sup>40</sup> "I begged Your disciples to cast it out, and they could not."<sup>41</sup> And Jesus answered and said, "You unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you and put up with you? Bring your son here."<sup>42</sup> While he was still approaching, the demon slammed him *to the ground* and threw him into a convulsion. But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the boy and gave him back to his father.<sup>43</sup> And they were all amazed at the greatness of God. (Luke 9:37-43a NASB)

**O. Jesus Foretells His Death and Resurrection—Matt. 17: 22-23; Mk. 9: 30-32; Lk. 9: 43b-45**

**Matt. 17: 22-23**

And while they were gathering together in Galilee, Jesus said to them, "The Son of Man is going to be delivered into the hands of men;<sup>23</sup> and they will kill Him, and He will be raised on the third day." And they were deeply grieved. (Matthew 17:22-23 NASB)

**Mk. 9: 30-32**

From there they went out and *began* to go through Galilee, and He did not want anyone to know *about it*.<sup>31</sup> For He was teaching His disciples and telling them, "The Son of Man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they will kill Him; and when He has been killed, He will rise three days later."<sup>32</sup> But they did not understand *this* statement, and they were afraid to ask Him. (Mark 9:30-32 NASB)

**Lk. 9: 43b-45**

But while everyone was marveling at all that He was doing, He said to His disciples,<sup>44</sup> "Let these words sink into your ears; for the Son of Man is going to be delivered into the hands of men."<sup>45</sup> But they did not understand this statement, and it was concealed from them so that they would not perceive it; and they were afraid to ask Him about this statement. (Luke 9:43b-45 NASB)

**Q. The Fourth Great Discourse in Matthew—Matt. 18: 1-35**

**1. The Little Child (Christ's Model of a Kingdom Citizen)—Matt. 18: 1-6; Mk. 9: 33-37; Lk. 9: 46-48**

**Matt. 18: 1-6**

At that time the disciples came to Jesus and said, "Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?"<sup>2</sup> And He called a child to Himself and set him before them,<sup>3</sup> and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you

are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven. <sup>4</sup> "Whoever then humbles himself as this child, he is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. <sup>5</sup> "And whoever receives one such child in My name receives Me; <sup>6</sup> but whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to stumble, it would be better for him to have a heavy millstone hung around his neck, and to be drowned in the depth of the sea. (Matthew 18:1-6 NASB)

***Mk. 9: 33-37***

They came to Capernaum; and when He was in the house, He *began* to question them, "What were you discussing on the way?" <sup>34</sup> But they kept silent, for on the way they had discussed with one another which of *them* was the greatest. <sup>35</sup> Sitting down, He called the twelve and said to them, "If anyone wants to be first, he shall be last of all and servant of all." <sup>36</sup> Taking a child, He set him before them, and taking him in His arms, He said to them, <sup>37</sup> "Whoever receives one child like this in My name receives Me; and whoever receives Me does not receive Me, but Him who sent Me." (Mark 9:33-37 NASB)

***Lk. 9: 46-48***

An argument started among them as to which of them might be the greatest. <sup>47</sup> But Jesus, knowing what they were thinking in their heart, took a child and stood him by His side, <sup>48</sup> and said to them, "Whoever receives this child in My name receives Me, and whoever receives Me receives Him who sent Me; for the one who is least among all of you, this is the one who is great." (Luke 9:46-48 NASB)

***2. Protecting His Little Ones from Sin—Matt. 18: 5-11; Mk. 9: 42-50***

***Matt. 18: 5-11***

"And whoever receives one such child in My name receives Me; <sup>6</sup> but whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to stumble, it would be better for him to have a heavy millstone hung around his neck, and to be drowned in the depth of the sea. <sup>7</sup> "Woe to the world because of *its* stumbling blocks! For it is inevitable that stumbling blocks come; but woe to that man through whom the stumbling block comes! <sup>8</sup> "If your hand or your foot causes you to stumble, cut it off and throw it from you; it is better for you to enter life crippled or lame, than to have two hands or two feet and be cast into the eternal fire. <sup>9</sup> "If your eye causes you to stumble, pluck it out and throw it from you. It is better for you to enter life with one eye, than to have two eyes and be cast into the fiery hell. <sup>10</sup> "See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven. <sup>11</sup> "For the Son of Man has come to save that which was *lost*. (Matthew 18:5-11 NASB)

***Mk. 9: 42-50***

"Whoever causes one of these little ones who believe to stumble, it would be better for him if, with a heavy millstone hung around his neck, he had been cast into the sea. <sup>43</sup> "If your hand causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life crippled, than, having your two hands, to go into hell, into the unquenchable fire, <sup>44</sup> *where THEIR WORM DOES NOT DIE, AND THE FIRE IS NOT QUENCHED*. <sup>45</sup> "If your foot causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life lame, than, having your two feet, to be cast into hell, <sup>46</sup> *where THEIR WORM DOES NOT DIE, AND THE FIRE IS NOT QUENCHED*. <sup>47</sup> "If your eye causes you to stumble, throw it out; it is better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye, than, having two eyes, to be cast into hell, <sup>48</sup> *where THEIR WORM DOES NOT DIE, AND THE FIRE IS NOT QUENCHED*. <sup>49</sup> "For everyone will be salted

with fire.<sup>50</sup> "Salt is good; but if the salt becomes unsalty, with what will you make it salty *again*? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with one another." (Mark 9:42-50 NASB)

### **3. The Father's Love for His Little Ones—Matt. 18: 10-14**

"See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven.<sup>11</sup> *"For the Son of Man has come to save that which was lost.*<sup>12</sup> "What do you think? If any man has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the mountains and go and search for the one that is straying?<sup>13</sup> "If it turns out that he finds it, truly I say to you, he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine which have not gone astray.<sup>14</sup> "So it is not *the* will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these little ones perish. (Matthew 18:10-14 NASB)

### **4. Pursuing the erring brother (Matt. 18: 15-20)**

"If your brother sins, go and show him his fault in private; if he listens to you, you have won your brother.<sup>16</sup> "But if he does not listen *to you*, take one or two more with you, so that **BY THE MOUTH OF TWO OR THREE WITNESSES EVERY FACT MAY BE CONFIRMED.**<sup>17</sup> "If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, let him be to you as a Gentile and a tax collector.<sup>18</sup> "Truly I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven.<sup>19</sup> "Again I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about anything that they may ask, it shall be done for them by My Father who is in heaven.<sup>20</sup> "For where two or three have gathered together in My name, I am there in their midst." (Matthew 18:15-20 NASB)

### **6. The intolerance of the disciples—Mk. 9: 38-41; Lk. 9: 49-50**

#### **Mk. 9: 38-41**

John said to Him, "Teacher, we saw someone casting out demons in Your name, and we tried to prevent him because he was not following us."<sup>39</sup> But Jesus said, "Do not hinder him, for there is no one who will perform a miracle in My name, and be able soon afterward to speak evil of Me.<sup>40</sup> "For he who is not against us is for us.<sup>41</sup> "For whoever gives you a cup of water to drink because of your name as *followers* of Christ, truly I say to you, he will not lose his reward. (Mark 9:38-41 NASB)

#### **Lk. 9: 49-50**

John answered and said, "Master, we saw someone casting out demons in Your name; and we tried to prevent him because he does not follow along with us."<sup>50</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Do not hinder *him*; for he who is not against you is for you." (Luke 9:49-50 NASB)

### **X. The Year of Opposition—The Judean and Perea Ministry**

#### **A. Luke's Narrative of Jesus' Teaching as He Travels To Jerusalem—Lk. 9: 51—19: 44**

##### **Matt. 19: 1-2; Mk. 10: 1**

##### **Lk. 9: 51**

When the days were approaching for His ascension, He was determined to go to Jerusalem; (Luke 9:51 NASB)

##### **Matt. 19: 1-2**

When Jesus had finished these words, He departed from Galilee and came into the region of Judea beyond the Jordan;<sup>2</sup> and large crowds followed Him, and He healed them there. (Matthew 19:1-2 NASB)

**Mk. 10: 1**

Getting up, He went from there to the region of Judea and beyond the Jordan; crowds gathered around Him again, and, according to His custom, He once more *began* to teach them. (Mark 10:1 NASB)

**7. The Blasphemy of the Pharisees and Their Insistence upon a Sign—Lk. 11: 14-32; Matt. 12: 22-45; Mk. 3: 22-30**

**Lk. 11: 14-32**

And He was casting out a demon, and it was mute; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed. <sup>15</sup> But some of them said, "He casts out demons by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons." <sup>16</sup> Others, to test *Him*, were demanding of Him a sign from heaven. <sup>17</sup> But He knew their thoughts and said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and a house *divided* against itself falls. <sup>18</sup> "If Satan also is divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? For you say that I cast out demons by Beelzebul. <sup>19</sup> "And if I by Beelzebul cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? So they will be your judges. <sup>20</sup> "But if I cast out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. <sup>21</sup> "When a strong *man*, fully armed, guards his own house, his possessions are undisturbed. <sup>22</sup> "But when someone stronger than he attacks him and overpowers him, he takes away from him all his armor on which he had relied and distributes his plunder. <sup>23</sup> "He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me, scatters. <sup>24</sup> "When the unclean spirit goes out of a man, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, and not finding any, it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.' <sup>25</sup> "And when it comes, it finds it swept and put in order. <sup>26</sup> "Then it goes and takes *along* seven other spirits more evil than itself, and they go in and live there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first." <sup>27</sup> While Jesus was saying these things, one of the women in the crowd raised her voice and said to Him, "Blessed is the womb that bore You and the breasts at which You nursed." <sup>28</sup> But He said, "On the contrary, blessed are those who hear the word of God and observe it." <sup>29</sup> As the crowds were increasing, He began to say, "This generation is a wicked generation; it seeks for a sign, and *yet* no sign will be given to it but the sign of Jonah. <sup>30</sup> "For just as Jonah became a sign to the Ninevites, so will the Son of Man be to this generation. <sup>31</sup> "The Queen of the South will rise up with the men of this generation at the judgment and condemn them, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here. <sup>32</sup> "The men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation at the judgment and condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here. (Luke 11:14-32 NASB)

**Matt. 12: 22-45**

Then a demon-possessed man *who was* blind and mute was brought to Jesus, and He healed him, so that the mute man spoke and saw. <sup>23</sup> All the crowds were amazed, and were saying, "This man cannot be the Son of David, can he?" <sup>24</sup> But when the Pharisees heard *this*, they said, "This man casts out demons only by Beelzebul the ruler of the demons." <sup>25</sup> And knowing their thoughts Jesus said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and any city or house divided against itself will not stand. <sup>26</sup> "If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand? <sup>27</sup> "If I by Beelzebul cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? For this reason they will be your judges. <sup>28</sup> "But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. <sup>29</sup> "Or how can anyone enter the strong man's house and carry off his property, unless he first binds the strong *man*? And then he will plunder his house. <sup>30</sup> "He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me scatters. <sup>31</sup> "Therefore I say to you, any sin and



blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven.<sup>32</sup> "Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the *age* to come."<sup>33</sup> "Either make the tree good and its fruit good, or make the tree bad and its fruit bad; for the tree is known by its fruit."<sup>34</sup> "You brood of vipers, how can you, being evil, speak what is good? For the mouth speaks out of that which fills the heart."<sup>35</sup> "The good man brings out of *his* good treasure what is good; and the evil man brings out of *his* evil treasure what is evil."<sup>36</sup> "But I tell you that every careless word that people speak, they shall give an accounting for it in the day of judgment."<sup>37</sup> "For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned."<sup>38</sup> Then some of the scribes and Pharisees said to Him, "Teacher, we want to see a sign from You."<sup>39</sup> But He answered and said to them, "An evil and adulterous generation craves for a sign; and *yet* no sign will be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet;<sup>40</sup> for just as JONAH WAS THREE DAYS AND THREE NIGHTS IN THE BELLY OF THE SEA MONSTER, so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth."<sup>41</sup> "The men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation at the judgment, and will condemn it because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here."<sup>42</sup> "The Queen of *the* South will rise up with this generation at the judgment and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here."<sup>43</sup> "Now when the unclean spirit goes out of a man, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, and does not find *it*."<sup>44</sup> "Then it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came'; and when it comes, it finds *it* unoccupied, swept, and put in order."<sup>45</sup> "Then it goes and takes along with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first. That is the way it will also be with this evil generation." (Matthew 12:22-45 NASB)

### ***Mk. 3: 22-30***

The scribes who came down from Jerusalem were saying, "He is possessed by Beelzebul," and "He casts out the demons by the ruler of the demons."<sup>23</sup> And He called them to Himself and began speaking to them in parables, "How can Satan cast out Satan?"<sup>24</sup> "If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand."<sup>25</sup> "If a house is divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand."<sup>26</sup> "If Satan has risen up against himself and is divided, he cannot stand, but he is finished!"<sup>27</sup> "But no one can enter the strong man's house and plunder his property unless he first binds the strong man, and then he will plunder his house."<sup>28</sup> "Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter;<sup>29</sup> but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin"—<sup>30</sup> because they were saying, "He has an unclean spirit." (Mark 3:22-30 NASB)

### ***B. Jesus' Teaching on Divorce—Matt. 19: 3-12; Mk. 10: 1-12***

#### ***Matt. 19: 3-12***

Some Pharisees came to Jesus, testing Him and asking, "Is it lawful *for a man* to divorce his wife for any reason at all?"<sup>4</sup> And He answered and said, "Have you not read that He who created *them* from the beginning MADE THEM MALE AND FEMALE,<sup>5</sup> and said, 'FOR THIS REASON A MAN SHALL LEAVE HIS FATHER AND MOTHER AND BE JOINED TO HIS WIFE, AND THE TWO SHALL BECOME ONE FLESH'?"<sup>6</sup> "So they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate."<sup>7</sup> They said to Him, "Why then did Moses command to GIVE HER A CERTIFICATE OF DIVORCE AND SEND *her* AWAY?"<sup>8</sup> He said to them, "Because of your hardness of heart Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning it has

not been this way.<sup>9</sup> "And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for immorality, and marries another woman commits adultery."<sup>10</sup> The disciples said to Him, "If the relationship of the man with his wife is like this, it is better not to marry."<sup>11</sup> But He said to them, "Not all men *can* accept this statement, but *only* those to whom it has been given."<sup>12</sup> "For there are eunuchs who were born that way from their mother's womb; and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men; and there are *also* eunuchs who made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to accept *this*, let him accept *it*." (Matthew 19:3-12 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 1-12***

Getting up, He went from there to the region of Judea and beyond the Jordan; crowds gathered around Him again, and, according to His custom, He once more *began* to teach them.<sup>2</sup> *Some* Pharisees came up to Jesus, testing Him, and *began* to question Him whether it was lawful for a man to divorce a wife.<sup>3</sup> And He answered and said to them, "What did Moses command you?"<sup>4</sup> They said, "Moses permitted *a man* TO WRITE A CERTIFICATE OF DIVORCE AND SEND *her* AWAY."<sup>5</sup> But Jesus said to them, "Because of your hardness of heart he wrote you this commandment."<sup>6</sup> "But from the beginning of creation, *God* MADE THEM MALE AND FEMALE.<sup>7</sup> "FOR THIS REASON A MAN SHALL LEAVE HIS FATHER AND MOTHER,<sup>8</sup> AND THE TWO SHALL BECOME ONE FLESH; so they are no longer two, but one flesh."<sup>9</sup> "What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate."<sup>10</sup> In the house the disciples *began* questioning Him about this again.<sup>11</sup> And He said to them, "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her;<sup>12</sup> and if she herself divorces her husband and marries another man, she is committing adultery." (Mark 10:1-12 NASB)

***C. Jesus Blesses the Little Children—Matt. 19: 13-15; Mk. 10: 13-16; Lk. 18: 15-17***

***Matt. 19: 13-15***

Then *some* children were brought to Him so that He might lay His hands on them and pray; and the disciples rebuked them.<sup>14</sup> But Jesus said, "Let the children alone, and do not hinder them from coming to Me; for the kingdom of heaven belongs to such as these."<sup>15</sup> After laying His hands on them, He departed from there. (Matthew 19:13-15 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 13-16***

And they were bringing children to Him so that He might touch them; but the disciples rebuked them.<sup>14</sup> But when Jesus saw this, He was indignant and said to them, "Permit the children to come to Me; do not hinder them; for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these."<sup>15</sup> "Truly I say to you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God like a child will not enter it *at all*."<sup>16</sup> And He took them in His arms and *began* blessing them, laying His hands on them. (Mark 10:13-16 NASB)

***Lk. 18: 15-17***

And they were bringing even their babies to Him so that He would touch them, but when the disciples saw it, they *began* rebuking them.<sup>16</sup> But Jesus called for them, saying, "Permit the children to come to Me, and do not hinder them, for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these."<sup>17</sup> "Truly I say to you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God like a child will not enter it *at all*." (Luke 18:15-17 NASB)

**D. The Rich Young Ruler—Matt. 19: 16-26; Mk. 10: 17-27; Lk. 18: 18-27**

**Matt. 19: 16-26**

And someone came to Him and said, "Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may obtain eternal life?"<sup>17</sup> And He said to him, "Why are you asking Me about what is good? There is *only* One who is good; but if you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments."<sup>18</sup> Then he said to Him, "Which ones?" And Jesus said, "YOU SHALL NOT COMMIT MURDER; YOU SHALL NOT COMMIT ADULTERY; YOU SHALL NOT STEAL; YOU SHALL NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS;<sup>19</sup> HONOR YOUR FATHER AND MOTHER; and YOU SHALL LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR AS YOURSELF."<sup>20</sup> The young man said to Him, "All these things I have kept; what am I still lacking?"<sup>21</sup> Jesus said to him, "If you wish to be complete, go *and* sell your possessions and give to *the* poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me."<sup>22</sup> But when the young man heard this statement, he went away grieving; for he was one who owned much property.<sup>23</sup> And Jesus said to His disciples, "Truly I say to you, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven."<sup>24</sup> "Again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."<sup>25</sup> When the disciples heard *this*, they were very astonished and said, "Then who can be saved?"<sup>26</sup> And looking at *them* Jesus said to them, "With people this is impossible, but with God all things are possible." (Matthew 19:16-26 NASB)

**Mk. 10: 17-27**

As He was setting out on a journey, a man ran up to Him and knelt before Him, and asked Him, "Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?"<sup>18</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good except God alone."<sup>19</sup> "You know the commandments, 'DO NOT MURDER, DO NOT COMMIT ADULTERY, DO NOT STEAL, DO NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS, Do not defraud, HONOR YOUR FATHER AND MOTHER.'"<sup>20</sup> And he said to Him, "Teacher, I have kept all these things from my youth up."<sup>21</sup> Looking at him, Jesus felt a love for him and said to him, "One thing you lack: go and sell all you possess and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me."<sup>22</sup> But at these words he was saddened, and he went away grieving, for he was one who owned much property.<sup>23</sup> And Jesus, looking around, said to His disciples, "How hard it will be for those who are wealthy to enter the kingdom of God!"<sup>24</sup> The disciples were amazed at His words. But Jesus answered again and said to them, "Children, how hard it is to enter the kingdom of God!"<sup>25</sup> "It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."<sup>26</sup> They were even more astonished and said to Him, "Then who can be saved?"<sup>27</sup> Looking at them, Jesus said, "With people it is impossible, but not with God; for all things are possible with God." (Mark 10:17-27 NASB)

**Lk. 18: 18-27**

A ruler questioned Him, saying, "Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?"<sup>19</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good except God alone."<sup>20</sup> "You know the commandments, 'DO NOT COMMIT ADULTERY, DO NOT MURDER, DO NOT STEAL, DO NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS, HONOR YOUR FATHER AND MOTHER.'"<sup>21</sup> And he said, "All these things I have kept from *my* youth."<sup>22</sup> When Jesus heard *this*, He said to him, "One thing you still lack; sell all that you possess and distribute it to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me."<sup>23</sup> But when he had heard these things, he became very sad, for he was extremely rich.<sup>24</sup> And Jesus looked at him and said, "How hard it is for those who are wealthy to enter the kingdom of God!"<sup>25</sup> "For it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."<sup>26</sup> They who heard it said, "Then who can be saved?"<sup>27</sup> But He said, "The things that are impossible with people are possible with God." (Luke 18:18-27 NASB)

***E. Rewards for Discipleship—Matt. 19: 27-30; Mk. 10: 28-31; Lk. 18: 28-30***

***Matt. 19: 27-30***

Then Peter said to Him, "Behold, we have left everything and followed You; what then will there be for us?"<sup>28</sup> And Jesus said to them, "Truly I say to you, that you who have followed Me, in the regeneration when the Son of Man will sit on His glorious throne, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."<sup>29</sup> "And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or farms for My name's sake, will receive many times as much, and will inherit eternal life."<sup>30</sup> "But many *who are* first will be last; and *the* last, first. (Matthew 19:27-30 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 28-31***

Peter began to say to Him, "Behold, we have left everything and followed You."<sup>29</sup> Jesus said, "Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or farms, for My sake and for the gospel's sake,<sup>30</sup> but that he will receive a hundred times as much now in the present age, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and farms, along with persecutions; and in the age to come, eternal life."<sup>31</sup> "But many *who are* first will be last, and the last, first." (Mark 10:28-31 NASB)

***Lk. 18: 28-30***

Peter said, "Behold, we have left our own *homes* and followed You."<sup>29</sup> And He said to them, "Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God,<sup>30</sup> who will not receive many times as much at this time and in the age to come, eternal life." (Luke 18:28-30 NASB)

***G. Jesus' Third Prediction of His Death and Resurrection—Matt. 20: 17-19; Mk. 10: 32-34; Lk. 18: 31-34***

***Matt. 20: 17-19***

As Jesus was about to go up to Jerusalem, He took the twelve *disciples* aside by themselves, and on the way He said to them,<sup>18</sup> "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem; and the Son of Man will be delivered to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn Him to death,<sup>19</sup> and will hand Him over to the Gentiles to mock and scourge and crucify *Him*, and on the third day He will be raised up." (Matthew 20:17-19 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 32-34***

They were on the road going up to Jerusalem, and Jesus was walking on ahead of them; and they were amazed, and those who followed were fearful. And again He took the twelve aside and began to tell them what was going to happen to Him,<sup>33</sup> *saying*, "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes; and they will condemn Him to death and will hand Him over to the Gentiles."<sup>34</sup> "They will mock Him and spit on Him, and scourge Him and kill *Him*, and three days later He will rise again." (Mark 10:32-34 NASB)

***Lk. 18: 31-34***

Then He took the twelve aside and said to them, "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all things which are written through the prophets about the Son of Man will be accomplished."<sup>32</sup> "For He will be handed over to the Gentiles, and will be mocked and mistreated and spit upon,<sup>33</sup> and after they have scourged Him, they will kill Him; and the third day He will rise again."<sup>34</sup> But the disciples understood none of these things, and *the meaning of* this statement was hidden from them, and they

did not comprehend the things that were said. (Luke 18:31-34 NASB)

***H. The Ambition of James and John—Matt. 20: 20-28; Mk. 10: 35-45***

***Matt. 20: 20-28***

Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee came to Jesus with her sons, bowing down and making a request of Him.<sup>21</sup> And He said to her, "What do you wish?" She said to Him, "Command that in Your kingdom these two sons of mine may sit one on Your right and one on Your left."<sup>22</sup> But Jesus answered, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink?" They said to Him, "We are able."<sup>23</sup> He said to them, "My cup you shall drink; but to sit on My right and on My left, this is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by My Father."<sup>24</sup> And hearing *this*, the ten became indignant with the two brothers.<sup>25</sup> But Jesus called them to Himself and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and *their* great men exercise authority over them."<sup>26</sup> "It is not this way among you, but whoever wishes to become great among you shall be your servant,<sup>27</sup> and whoever wishes to be first among you shall be your slave;<sup>28</sup> just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many." (Matthew 20:20-28 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 35-45***

James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, came up to Jesus, saying, "Teacher, we want You to do for us whatever we ask of You."<sup>36</sup> And He said to them, "What do you want Me to do for you?"<sup>37</sup> They said to Him, "Grant that we may sit, one on Your right and one on *Your* left, in Your glory."<sup>38</sup> But Jesus said to them, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, or to be baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized?"<sup>39</sup> They said to Him, "We are able." And Jesus said to them, "The cup that I drink you shall drink; and you shall be baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized."<sup>40</sup> "But to sit on My right or on My left, this is not Mine to give; but it is for those for whom it has been prepared."<sup>41</sup> Hearing *this*, the ten began to feel indignant with James and John.<sup>42</sup> Calling them to Himself, Jesus said to them, "You know that those who are recognized as rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them; and their great men exercise authority over them."<sup>43</sup> "But it is not this way among you, but whoever wishes to become great among you shall be your servant;<sup>44</sup> and whoever wishes to be first among you shall be slave of all."<sup>45</sup> "For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many." (Mark 10:35-45 NASB)

***I. The Healing of Two Blind Men—Matt. 20: 29-34; Mk. 10: 46-52; Lk. 18: 35-43***

***Matt. 20: 29-34***

As they were leaving Jericho, a large crowd followed Him.<sup>30</sup> And two blind men sitting by the road, hearing that Jesus was passing by, cried out, "Lord, have mercy on us, Son of David!"<sup>31</sup> The crowd sternly told them to be quiet, but they cried out all the more, "Lord, Son of David, have mercy on us!"<sup>32</sup> And Jesus stopped and called them, and said, "What do you want Me to do for you?"<sup>33</sup> They said to Him, "Lord, *we want* our eyes to be opened."<sup>34</sup> Moved with compassion, Jesus touched their eyes; and immediately they regained their sight and followed Him. (Matthew 20:29-34 NASB)

***Mk. 10: 46-52***

Then they came to Jericho. And as He was leaving Jericho with His disciples and a large crowd, a blind beggar *named* Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, was sitting by the road.<sup>47</sup> When he heard that it was Jesus the Nazarene, he began to cry out and say, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!"<sup>48</sup>

Many were sternly telling him to be quiet, but he kept crying out all the more, "Son of David, have mercy on me!"<sup>49</sup> And Jesus stopped and said, "Call him *here*." So they called the blind man, saying to him, "Take courage, stand up! He is calling for you."<sup>50</sup> Throwing aside his cloak, he jumped up and came to Jesus.<sup>51</sup> And answering him, Jesus said, "What do you want Me to do for you?" And the blind man said to Him, "Rabboni, *I want to regain my sight!*"<sup>52</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Go; your faith has made you well." Immediately he regained his sight and *began* following Him on the road. (Mark 10:46-52 NASB)

**Lk. 18: 35-43**

As Jesus was approaching Jericho, a blind man was sitting by the road begging.<sup>36</sup> Now hearing a crowd going by, he *began* to inquire what this was.<sup>37</sup> They told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing by.<sup>38</sup> And he called out, saying, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!"<sup>39</sup> Those who led the way were sternly telling him to be quiet; but he kept crying out all the more, "Son of David, have mercy on me!"<sup>40</sup> And Jesus stopped and commanded that he be brought to Him; and when he came near, He questioned him,<sup>41</sup> "What do you want Me to do for you?" And he said, "Lord, *I want to regain my sight!*"<sup>42</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Receive your sight; your faith has made you well."<sup>43</sup> Immediately he regained his sight and *began* following Him, glorifying God; and when all the people saw it, they gave praise to God. (Luke 18:35-43 NASB)

**XI. The Last Week of Jesus' Ministry on Earth (The Passion Week)—Matt. 21: 1—28: 20  
Mk. 11: 1—16: 8; Lk. 19: 28—24: 49**

**A. The Triumphal Entry—Matt. 21: 1-11; Mk. 11: 1-10; Lk. 19: 28-44; Jn. 12: 12-19**

**Matt. 21: 1-11**

When they had approached Jerusalem and had come to Bethphage, at the Mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples,<sup>2</sup> saying to them, "Go into the village opposite you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied *there* and a colt with her; untie them and bring them to Me."<sup>3</sup> "If anyone says anything to you, you shall say, 'The Lord has need of them,' and immediately he will send them."<sup>4</sup> This took place to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet:<sup>5</sup> "SAY TO THE DAUGHTER OF ZION, 'BEHOLD YOUR KING IS COMING TO YOU, GENTLE, AND MOUNTED ON A DONKEY, EVEN ON A COLT, THE FOAL OF A BEAST OF BURDEN.'" <sup>6</sup> The disciples went and did just as Jesus had instructed them,<sup>7</sup> and brought the donkey and the colt, and laid their coats on them; and He sat on the coats.<sup>8</sup> Most of the crowd spread their coats in the road, and others were cutting branches from the trees and spreading them in the road.<sup>9</sup> The crowds going ahead of Him, and those who followed, were shouting, "Hosanna to the Son of David; BLESSED IS HE WHO COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD; Hosanna in the highest!"<sup>10</sup> When He had entered Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, saying, "Who is this?"<sup>11</sup> And the crowds were saying, "This is the prophet Jesus, from Nazareth in Galilee." (Matthew 21:1-11 NASB)

**Mk. 11: 1-10**

As they approached Jerusalem, at Bethphage and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, He sent two of His disciples,<sup>2</sup> and said to them, "Go into the village opposite you, and immediately as you enter it, you will find a colt tied *there*, on which no one yet has ever sat; untie it and bring it *here*."<sup>3</sup> "If anyone says to you, 'Why are you doing this?' you say, 'The Lord has need of it'; and immediately he will send it back here."<sup>4</sup> They went away and found a colt tied at the door, outside in the street; and they untied it.<sup>5</sup> Some of the bystanders were saying to them, "What are you doing, untying the colt?"<sup>6</sup> They spoke to them just as Jesus had told *them*, and they gave them permission.<sup>7</sup> They brought the

colt to Jesus and put their coats on it; and He sat on it.<sup>8</sup> And many spread their coats in the road, and others *spread* leafy branches which they had cut from the fields.<sup>9</sup> Those who went in front and those who followed were shouting: "Hosanna! BLESSED IS HE WHO COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD;<sup>10</sup> Blessed *is* the coming kingdom of our father David; Hosanna in the highest!" (Mark 11:1-10 NASB)

**Lk. 19: 28-44**

After He had said these things, He was going on ahead, going up to Jerusalem.<sup>29</sup> When He approached Bethphage and Bethany, near the mount that is called Olivet, He sent two of the disciples,<sup>30</sup> saying, "Go into the village ahead of *you*; there, as you enter, you will find a colt tied on which no one yet has ever sat; untie it and bring it *here*."<sup>31</sup> "If anyone asks you, 'Why are you untying it?' you shall say, 'The Lord has need of it.'"<sup>32</sup> So those who were sent went away and found it just as He had told them.<sup>33</sup> As they were untying the colt, its owners said to them, "Why are you untying the colt?"<sup>34</sup> They said, "The Lord has need of it."<sup>35</sup> They brought it to Jesus, and they threw their coats on the colt and put Jesus *on it*.<sup>36</sup> As He was going, they were spreading their coats on the road.<sup>37</sup> As soon as He was approaching, near the descent of the Mount of Olives, the whole crowd of the disciples began to praise God joyfully with a loud voice for all the miracles which they had seen,<sup>38</sup> shouting: "BLESSED IS THE KING WHO COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD; Peace in heaven and glory in the highest!"<sup>39</sup> Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to Him, "Teacher, rebuke Your disciples."<sup>40</sup> But Jesus answered, "I tell you, if these become silent, the stones will cry out!"<sup>41</sup> When He approached *Jerusalem*, He saw the city and wept over it,<sup>42</sup> saying, "If you had known in this day, even you, the things which make for peace! But now they have been hidden from your eyes.<sup>43</sup> "For the days will come upon you when your enemies will throw up a barricade against you, and surround you and hem you in on every side,<sup>44</sup> and they will level you to the ground and your children within you, and they will not leave in you one stone upon another, because you did not recognize the time of your visitation." (Luke 19:28-44 NASB)

**Jn. 12: 12-19**

On the next day the large crowd who had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,<sup>13</sup> took the branches of the palm trees and went out to meet Him, and *began* to shout, "Hosanna! BLESSED IS HE WHO COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD, even the King of Israel."<sup>14</sup> Jesus, finding a young donkey, sat on it; as it is written,<sup>15</sup> "FEAR NOT, DAUGHTER OF ZION; BEHOLD, YOUR KING IS COMING, SEATED ON A DONKEY'S COLT."<sup>16</sup> These things His disciples did not understand at the first; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of Him, and that they had done these things to Him.<sup>17</sup> So the people, who were with Him when He called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, continued to testify *about Him*.<sup>18</sup> For this reason also the people went and met Him, because they heard that He had performed this sign.<sup>19</sup> So the Pharisees said to one another, "You see that you are not doing any good; look, the world has gone after Him." (John 12:12-19 NASB)

**B. The Cleansing of the Temple and the Withered Fig Tree—Matt. 21: 12-22; Mk. 11: 11-26; Lk. 19: 45-48**

**Matt. 21: 12-22**

And Jesus entered the temple and drove out all those who were buying and selling in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who were selling doves.<sup>13</sup> And He said to them, "It is written, 'MY HOUSE SHALL BE CALLED A HOUSE OF PRAYER'; but you are making it a ROBBERS' DEN."<sup>14</sup> And *the* blind and *the* lame came to Him in the temple, and He

healed them.<sup>15</sup> But when the chief priests and the scribes saw the wonderful things that He had done, and the children who were shouting in the temple, "Hosanna to the Son of David," they became indignant<sup>16</sup> and said to Him, "Do You hear what these *children* are saying?" And Jesus said to them, "Yes; have you never read, 'OUT OF THE MOUTH OF INFANTS AND NURSING BABIES YOU HAVE PREPARED PRAISE FOR YOURSELF?'"<sup>17</sup> And He left them and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.<sup>18</sup> Now in the morning, when He was returning to the city, He became hungry.<sup>19</sup> Seeing a lone fig tree by the road, He came to it and found nothing on it except leaves only; and He said to it, "No longer shall there ever be *any* fruit from you." And at once the fig tree withered.<sup>20</sup> Seeing *this*, the disciples were amazed and asked, "How did the fig tree wither *all* at once?"<sup>21</sup> And Jesus answered and said to them, "Truly I say to you, if you have faith and do not doubt, you will not only do what was done to the fig tree, but even if you say to this mountain, 'Be taken up and cast into the sea,' it will happen."<sup>22</sup> "And all things you ask in prayer, believing, you will receive." (Matthew 21:12-22 NASB)

***Mk. 11: 11-26***

Jesus entered Jerusalem *and came* into the temple; and after looking around at everything, He left for Bethany with the twelve, since it was already late.<sup>12</sup> On the next day, when they had left Bethany, He became hungry.<sup>13</sup> Seeing at a distance a fig tree in leaf, He went *to see* if perhaps He would find anything on it; and when He came to it, He found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs.<sup>14</sup> He said to it, "May no one ever eat fruit from you again!" And His disciples were listening.<sup>15</sup> Then they came to Jerusalem. And He entered the temple and began to drive out those who were buying and selling in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who were selling doves;<sup>16</sup> and He would not permit anyone to carry merchandise through the temple.<sup>17</sup> And He *began* to teach and say to them, "Is it not written, 'MY HOUSE SHALL BE CALLED A HOUSE OF PRAYER FOR ALL THE NATIONS '? But you have made it a ROBBERS' DEN."<sup>18</sup> The chief priests and the scribes heard *this*, and *began* seeking how to destroy Him; for they were afraid of Him, for the whole crowd was astonished at His teaching.<sup>19</sup> When evening came, they would go out of the city.<sup>20</sup> As they were passing by in the morning, they saw the fig tree withered from the roots *up*.<sup>21</sup> Being reminded, Peter said to Him, "Rabbi, look, the fig tree which You cursed has withered."<sup>22</sup> And Jesus answered saying to them, "Have faith in God."<sup>23</sup> "Truly I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, 'Be taken up and cast into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that what he says is going to happen, it will be *granted* him."<sup>24</sup> "Therefore I say to you, all things for which you pray and ask, believe that you have received them, and they will be *granted* you."<sup>25</sup> "Whenever you stand praying, forgive, if you have anything against anyone, so that your Father who is in heaven will also forgive you your transgressions."<sup>26</sup> "*But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father who is in heaven forgive your transgressions.*" (Mark 11:11-26 NASB)

***Lk. 19: 45-48***

Jesus entered the temple and began to drive out those who were selling,<sup>46</sup> saying to them, "It is written, 'AND MY HOUSE SHALL BE A HOUSE OF PRAYER,' but you have made it a ROBBERS' DEN."<sup>47</sup> And He was teaching daily in the temple; but the chief priests and the scribes and the leading men among the people were trying to destroy Him,<sup>48</sup> and they could not find anything that they might do, for all the people were hanging on to every word He said. (Luke 19:45-48 NASB)

***C. Jesus' Authority Questioned by the Chief Priests, Scribes, and Elders —Matt. 21: 23-27; Mk. 11: 27-33; Lk. 20: 1-8***



**Matt. 21: 23-27**

When He entered the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to Him while He was teaching, and said, "By what authority are You doing these things, and who gave You this authority?"<sup>24</sup> Jesus said to them, "I will also ask you one thing, which if you tell Me, I will also tell you by what authority I do these things."<sup>25</sup> "The baptism of John was from what *source*, from heaven or from men?" And they *began* reasoning among themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' He will say to us, 'Then why did you not believe him?'"<sup>26</sup> "But if we say, 'From men,' we fear the people; for they all regard John as a prophet."<sup>27</sup> And answering Jesus, they said, "We do not know." He also said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things. (Matthew 21:23-27 NASB)

**Mk. 11: 27-33**

They came again to Jerusalem. And as He was walking in the temple, the chief priests and the scribes and the elders came to Him,<sup>28</sup> and *began* saying to Him, "By what authority are You doing these things, or who gave You this authority to do these things?"<sup>29</sup> And Jesus said to them, "I will ask you one question, and you answer Me, and *then* I will tell you by what authority I do these things."<sup>30</sup> "Was the baptism of John from heaven, or from men? Answer Me."<sup>31</sup> They *began* reasoning among themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' He will say, 'Then why did you not believe him?'"<sup>32</sup> "But shall we say, 'From men?'"-- they were afraid of the people, for everyone considered John to have been a real prophet.<sup>33</sup> Answering Jesus, they said, "We do not know." And Jesus said to them, "Nor will I tell you by what authority I do these things." (Mark 11:27-33 NAU)

**Lk. 20: 1-8**

On one of the days while He was teaching the people in the temple and preaching the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes with the elders confronted *Him*,<sup>2</sup> and they spoke, saying to Him, "Tell us by what authority You are doing these things, or who is the one who gave You this authority?"<sup>3</sup> Jesus answered and said to them, "I will also ask you a question, and you tell Me."<sup>4</sup> "Was the baptism of John from heaven or from men?"<sup>5</sup> They reasoned among themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' He will say, 'Why did you not believe him?'"<sup>6</sup> "But if we say, 'From men,' all the people will stone us to death, for they are convinced that John was a prophet."<sup>7</sup> So they answered that they did not know where *it came* from.<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said to them, "Nor will I tell you by what authority I do these things." (Luke 20:1-8 NASB)

**E. The Parable of the Vineyard Owner—Matt. 21: 33-46; Mk. 12: 1-12; Lk. 20: 9-19**

**Matt. 21: 33-46**

"Listen to another parable. There was a landowner who PLANTED A VINEYARD AND PUT A WALL AROUND IT AND DUG A WINE PRESS IN IT, AND BUILT A TOWER, and rented it out to vine-growers and went on a journey."<sup>34</sup> "When the harvest time approached, he sent his slaves to the vine-growers to receive his produce."<sup>35</sup> "The vine-growers took his slaves and beat one, and killed another, and stoned a third."<sup>36</sup> "Again he sent another group of slaves larger than the first; and they did the same thing to them."<sup>37</sup> "But afterward he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.'<sup>38</sup> "But when the vine-growers saw the son, they said among themselves, 'This is the heir; come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.'<sup>39</sup> "They took him, and threw him out of the vineyard and killed him."<sup>40</sup> "Therefore when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vine-growers?"<sup>41</sup> They said to Him, "He will bring those wretches to a wretched end, and will rent out the vineyard to other vine-growers who will pay him the proceeds at the *proper* seasons."<sup>42</sup> Jesus said to them, "Did

you never read in the Scriptures, 'THE STONE WHICH THE BUILDERS REJECTED, THIS BECAME THE CHIEF CORNER *stone*; THIS CAME ABOUT FROM THE LORD, AND IT IS MARVELOUS IN OUR EYES '?'<sup>43</sup> "Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a people, producing the fruit of it."<sup>44</sup> "And he who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces; but on whomever it falls, it will scatter him like dust."<sup>45</sup> When the chief priests and the Pharisees heard His parables, they understood that He was speaking about them.<sup>46</sup> When they sought to seize Him, they feared the people, because they considered Him to be a prophet. (Matthew 21:33-46 NASB)

**Mk. 12: 1-12**

And He began to speak to them in parables: "A man PLANTED A VINEYARD AND PUT A WALL AROUND IT, AND DUG A VAT UNDER THE WINE PRESS AND BUILT A TOWER, and rented it out to vine-growers and went on a journey."<sup>2</sup> "At the *harvest* time he sent a slave to the vine-growers, in order to receive *some* of the produce of the vineyard from the vine-growers."<sup>3</sup> "They took him, and beat him and sent him away empty-handed."<sup>4</sup> "Again he sent them another slave, and they wounded him in the head, and treated him shamefully."<sup>5</sup> "And he sent another, and that one they killed; and *so with* many others, beating some and killing others."<sup>6</sup> "He had one more *to send*, a beloved son; he sent him last *of all* to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.'<sup>7</sup> "But those vine-growers said to one another, 'This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours!'<sup>8</sup> "They took him, and killed him and threw him out of the vineyard."<sup>9</sup> "What will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the vine-growers, and will give the vineyard to others."<sup>10</sup> "Have you not even read this Scripture: 'THE STONE WHICH THE BUILDERS REJECTED, THIS BECAME THE CHIEF CORNER *stone*;<sup>11</sup> THIS CAME ABOUT FROM THE LORD, AND IT IS MARVELOUS IN OUR EYES '?'<sup>12</sup> And they were seeking to seize Him, and *yet* they feared the people, for they understood that He spoke the parable against them. And *so* they left Him and went away. (Mark 12:1-12 NASB)

**Lk. 20: 9-19**

And He began to tell the people this parable: "A man planted a vineyard and rented it out to vine-growers, and went on a journey for a long time."<sup>10</sup> "At the *harvest* time he sent a slave to the vine-growers, so that they would give him *some* of the produce of the vineyard; but the vine-growers beat him and sent him away empty-handed."<sup>11</sup> "And he proceeded to send another slave; and they beat him also and treated him shamefully and sent him away empty-handed."<sup>12</sup> "And he proceeded to send a third; and this one also they wounded and cast out."<sup>13</sup> "The owner of the vineyard said, 'What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; perhaps they will respect him.'<sup>14</sup> "But when the vine-growers saw him, they reasoned with one another, saying, 'This is the heir; let us kill him so that the inheritance will be ours.'<sup>15</sup> "So they threw him out of the vineyard and killed him. What, then, will the owner of the vineyard do to them?<sup>16</sup> "He will come and destroy these vine-growers and will give the vineyard to others." When they heard it, they said, "May it never be!"<sup>17</sup> But Jesus looked at them and said, "What then is this that is written: 'THE STONE WHICH THE BUILDERS REJECTED, THIS BECAME THE CHIEF CORNER *stone*?'<sup>18</sup> "Everyone who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces; but on whomever it falls, it will scatter him like dust."<sup>19</sup> The scribes and the chief priests tried to lay hands on Him that very hour, and they feared the people; for they understood that He spoke this parable against them. (Luke 20:9-19 NASB)

**G. Jesus Tested by the Scribes and Chief Priests about Submission to God or Caesar**  
—Matt. 22: 15-22; Mk. 12: 13-17; Lk. 20: 20-26

**Matt. 22: 15-22**

Then the Pharisees went and plotted together how they might trap Him in what He said. <sup>16</sup> And they sent their disciples to Him, along with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that You are truthful and teach the way of God in truth, and defer to no one; for You are not partial to any. <sup>17</sup> "Tell us then, what do You think? Is it lawful to give a poll-tax to Caesar, or not?" <sup>18</sup> But Jesus perceived their malice, and said, "Why are you testing Me, you hypocrites? <sup>19</sup> "Show Me the coin *used* for the poll-tax." And they brought Him a denarius. <sup>20</sup> And He said to them, "Whose likeness and inscription is this?" <sup>21</sup> They said to Him, "Caesar's." Then He said to them, "Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's." <sup>22</sup> And hearing *this*, they were amazed, and leaving Him, they went away. (Matthew 22:15-22 NASB)

**Mk. 12: 13-17**

Then they sent some of the Pharisees and Herodians to Him in order to trap Him in a statement. <sup>14</sup> They came and said to Him, "Teacher, we know that You are truthful and defer to no one; for You are not partial to any, but teach the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to pay a poll-tax to Caesar, or not? <sup>15</sup> "Shall we pay or shall we not pay?" But He, knowing their hypocrisy, said to them, "Why are you testing Me? Bring Me a denarius to look at." <sup>16</sup> They brought *one*. And He said to them, "Whose likeness and inscription is this?" And they said to Him, "Caesar's." <sup>17</sup> And Jesus said to them, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's." And they were amazed at Him. (Mark 12:13-17 NASB)

**Lk. 20: 20-26**

So they watched Him, and sent spies who pretended to be righteous, in order that they might catch Him in some statement, so that they *could* deliver Him to the rule and the authority of the governor. <sup>21</sup> They questioned Him, saying, "Teacher, we know that You speak and teach correctly, and You are not partial to any, but teach the way of God in truth. <sup>22</sup> "Is it lawful for us to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?" <sup>23</sup> But He detected their trickery and said to them, <sup>24</sup> "Show Me a denarius. Whose likeness and inscription does it have?" They said, "Caesar's." <sup>25</sup> And He said to them, "Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's." <sup>26</sup> And they were unable to catch Him in a saying in the presence of the people; and being amazed at His answer, they became silent. (Luke 20:20-26 NASB)

**H. Jesus Tested by the Sadducees Concerning the Resurrection—Matt. 22: 23-33; Mk. 12: 18-27; Lk. 20: 27-40**

**Matt. 22: 23-33**

On that day *some* Sadducees (who say there is no resurrection) came to Jesus and questioned Him, <sup>24</sup> asking, "Teacher, Moses said, 'IF A MAN DIES HAVING NO CHILDREN, HIS BROTHER AS NEXT OF KIN SHALL MARRY HIS WIFE, AND RAISE UP CHILDREN FOR HIS BROTHER.' <sup>25</sup> "Now there were seven brothers with us; and the first married and died, and having no children left his wife to his brother; <sup>26</sup> so also the second, and the third, down to the seventh. <sup>27</sup> "Last of all, the woman died. <sup>28</sup> "In the resurrection, therefore, whose wife of the seven will she be? For they all had *married* her." <sup>29</sup> But Jesus answered and said to them, "You are mistaken, not understanding the Scriptures nor the power of God. <sup>30</sup> "For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in

marriage, but are like angels in heaven.<sup>31</sup> "But regarding the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by God:<sup>32</sup> 'I AM THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, AND THE GOD OF ISAAC, AND THE GOD OF JACOB '? He is not the God of the dead but of the living."<sup>33</sup> When the crowds heard *this*, they were astonished at His teaching. (Matthew 22:23-33 NASB)

***Mk. 12: 18-27***

Some Sadducees (who say that there is no resurrection) came to Jesus, and *began* questioning Him, saying,<sup>19</sup> "Teacher, Moses wrote for us that IF A MAN'S BROTHER DIES and leaves behind a wife AND LEAVES NO CHILD, HIS BROTHER SHOULD MARRY THE WIFE AND RAISE UP CHILDREN TO HIS BROTHER."<sup>20</sup> "There were seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and died leaving no children.<sup>21</sup> "The second one married her, and died leaving behind no children; and the third likewise;<sup>22</sup> and *so* all seven left no children. Last of all the woman died also.<sup>23</sup> "In the resurrection, when they rise again, which one's wife will she be? For all seven had married her."<sup>24</sup> Jesus said to them, "Is this not the reason you are mistaken, that you do not understand the Scriptures or the power of God?<sup>25</sup> "For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven."<sup>26</sup> "But regarding the fact that the dead rise again, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the *passage about the burning bush*, how God spoke to him, saying, 'I AM THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, AND THE GOD OF ISAAC, and the God of Jacob '?<sup>27</sup> "He is not the God of the dead, but of the living; you are greatly mistaken." (Mark 12:18-27 NAU)

***Lk. 20: 27-40***

Now there came to Him some of the Sadducees (who say that there is no resurrection),<sup>28</sup> and they questioned Him, saying, "Teacher, Moses wrote for us that IF A MAN'S BROTHER DIES, having a wife, AND HE IS CHILDLESS, HIS BROTHER SHOULD MARRY THE WIFE AND RAISE UP CHILDREN TO HIS BROTHER."<sup>29</sup> "Now there were seven brothers; and the first took a wife and died childless;<sup>30</sup> and the second<sup>31</sup> and the third married her; and in the same way all seven died, leaving no children.<sup>32</sup> "Finally the woman died also.<sup>33</sup> "In the resurrection therefore, which one's wife will she be? For all seven had married her."<sup>34</sup> Jesus said to them, "The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage,<sup>35</sup> but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage;<sup>36</sup> for they cannot even die anymore, because they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.<sup>37</sup> "But that the dead are raised, even Moses showed, in the *passage about the burning bush*, where he calls the Lord THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, AND THE GOD OF ISAAC, AND THE GOD OF JACOB."<sup>38</sup> "Now He is not the God of the dead but of the living; for all live to Him."<sup>39</sup> Some of the scribes answered and said, "Teacher, You have spoken well."<sup>40</sup> For they did not have courage to question Him any longer about anything. (Luke 20:27-40 NASB)

***I. Jesus Tested by the Pharisees about the Greatest Commandment—Matt. 22: 34-40;***

***Mk. 12: 28-34***

***Matt. 22: 34-40***

But when the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered themselves together.<sup>35</sup> One of them, a lawyer, asked Him *a question*, testing Him,<sup>36</sup> "Teacher, which is the great commandment in the Law?"<sup>37</sup> And He said to him, "'YOU SHALL LOVE THE LORD YOUR GOD WITH ALL YOUR HEART, AND WITH ALL YOUR SOUL, AND WITH ALL YOUR MIND.'<sup>38</sup> "This is the great and foremost commandment.<sup>39</sup> "The second is like it, 'YOU SHALL LOVE YOUR

NEIGHBOR AS YOURSELF.'<sup>40</sup> "On these two commandments depend the whole Law and the Prophets." (Matthew 22:34-40 NASB)

***Mk. 12: 28-34***

One of the scribes came and heard them arguing, and recognizing that He had answered them well, asked Him, "What commandment is the foremost of all?"<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered, "The foremost is, 'HEAR, O ISRAEL! THE LORD OUR GOD IS ONE LORD;<sup>30</sup> AND YOU SHALL LOVE THE LORD YOUR GOD WITH ALL YOUR HEART, AND WITH ALL YOUR SOUL, AND WITH ALL YOUR MIND, AND WITH ALL YOUR STRENGTH.'<sup>31</sup> "The second is this, 'YOU SHALL LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR AS YOURSELF.' There is no other commandment greater than these."<sup>32</sup> The scribe said to Him, "Right, Teacher; You have truly stated that HE IS ONE, AND THERE IS NO ONE ELSE BESIDES HIM;<sup>33</sup> AND TO LOVE HIM WITH ALL THE HEART AND WITH ALL THE UNDERSTANDING AND WITH ALL THE STRENGTH, AND TO LOVE ONE'S NEIGHBOR AS HIMSELF, is much more than all burnt offerings and sacrifices."<sup>34</sup> When Jesus saw that he had answered intelligently, He said to him, "You are not far from the kingdom of God." After that, no one would venture to ask Him any more questions. (Mark 12:28-34 NASB)

***J. Jesus Questions the Pharisees about David's Prophecy in Ps. 110: 1—Matt. 22: 41-46; Mk. 12: 35-37; Lk. 20: 41-44***

***Matt. 22: 41-46***

Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question:<sup>42</sup> "What do you think about the Christ, whose son is He?" They said to Him, "*The son of David.*"<sup>43</sup> He said to them, "Then how does David in the Spirit call Him 'Lord,' saying,<sup>44</sup> 'THE LORD SAID TO MY LORD, "SIT AT MY RIGHT HAND, UNTIL I PUT YOUR ENEMIES BENEATH YOUR FEET"'?<sup>45</sup> "If David then calls Him 'Lord,' how is He his son?"<sup>46</sup> No one was able to answer Him a word, nor did anyone dare from that day on to ask Him another question. (Matthew 22:41-46 NASB)

***Mk. 12: 35-37***

And Jesus *began* to say, as He taught in the temple, "How *is it that* the scribes say that the Christ is the son of David?<sup>36</sup> "David himself said in the Holy Spirit, 'THE LORD SAID TO MY LORD, "SIT AT MY RIGHT HAND, UNTIL I PUT YOUR ENEMIES BENEATH YOUR FEET.'"<sup>37</sup> "David himself calls Him 'Lord'; so in what sense is He his son?" And the large crowd enjoyed listening to Him. (Mark 12:35-37 NASB)

***Lk. 20: 41-44***

Then He said to them, "How *is it that* they say the Christ is David's son?<sup>42</sup> "For David himself says in the book of Psalms, 'THE LORD SAID TO MY LORD, "SIT AT MY RIGHT HAND, UNTIL I MAKE YOUR ENEMIES A FOOTSTOOL FOR YOUR FEET.'"<sup>43</sup> "Therefore David calls Him 'Lord,' and how is He his son?" (Luke 20:41-44 NASB)

***K. The Fifth Great Discourse in Matthew (The Seven Woes against the Scribes and Pharisees)—Matt. 23: 1-39; Mk. 12: 38-40; Lk. 20: 45-47***

***Matt. 23: 1-39***

Then Jesus spoke to the crowds and to His disciples,<sup>2</sup> saying: "The scribes and the Pharisees have seated themselves in the chair of Moses;<sup>3</sup> therefore all that they tell you, do and observe, but do not

do according to their deeds; for they say *things* and do not do *them*.<sup>4</sup> "They tie up heavy burdens and lay them on men's shoulders, but they themselves are unwilling to move them with *so much as a finger*.<sup>5</sup> "But they do all their deeds to be noticed by men; for they broaden their phylacteries and lengthen the tassels *of their garments*.<sup>6</sup> "They love the place of honor at banquets and the chief seats in the synagogues,<sup>7</sup> and respectful greetings in the market places, and being called Rabbi by men.<sup>8</sup> "But do not be called Rabbi; for One is your Teacher, and you are all brothers.<sup>9</sup> "Do not call *anyone* on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven.<sup>10</sup> "Do not be called leaders; for One is your Leader, *that is*, Christ.<sup>11</sup> "But the greatest among you shall be your servant.<sup>12</sup> "Whoever exalts himself shall be humbled; and whoever humbles himself shall be exalted.<sup>13</sup> "But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you shut off the kingdom of heaven from people; for you do not enter in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.<sup>14</sup> "*Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you devour widows' houses, and for a pretense you make long prayers; therefore you will receive greater condemnation*.<sup>15</sup> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you travel around on sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves.<sup>16</sup> "Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the temple, *that is* nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple is obligated.'<sup>17</sup> "You fools and blind men! Which is more important, the gold or the temple that sanctified the gold?<sup>18</sup> "And, 'Whoever swears by the altar, *that is* nothing, but whoever swears by the offering on it, he is obligated.'<sup>19</sup> "You blind men, which is more important, the offering, or the altar that sanctifies the offering?<sup>20</sup> "Therefore, whoever swears by the altar, swears *both* by the altar and by everything on it.<sup>21</sup> "And whoever swears by the temple, swears *both* by the temple and by Him who dwells within it.<sup>22</sup> "And whoever swears by heaven, swears *both* by the throne of God and by Him who sits upon it.<sup>23</sup> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you tithe mint and dill and cummin, and have neglected the weightier provisions of the law: justice and mercy and faithfulness; but these are the things you should have done without neglecting the others.<sup>24</sup> "You blind guides, who strain out a gnat and swallow a camel!<sup>25</sup> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you clean the outside of the cup and of the dish, but inside they are full of robbery and self-indulgence.<sup>26</sup> "You blind Pharisee, first clean the inside of the cup and of the dish, so that the outside of it may become clean also.<sup>27</sup> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which on the outside appear beautiful, but inside they are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness.<sup>28</sup> "So you, too, outwardly appear righteous to men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.<sup>29</sup> "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous,<sup>30</sup> and say, 'If we had been *living* in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partners with them in *shedding* the blood of the prophets.'<sup>31</sup> "So you testify against yourselves, that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets.<sup>32</sup> "Fill up, then, the measure *of the guilt* of your fathers.<sup>33</sup> "You serpents, you brood of vipers, how will you escape the sentence of hell?<sup>34</sup> "Therefore, behold, I am sending you prophets and wise men and scribes; some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city,<sup>35</sup> so that upon you may fall *the guilt of* all the righteous blood shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar.<sup>36</sup> "Truly I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.<sup>37</sup> "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were unwilling.<sup>38</sup> "Behold, your house is being left to you desolate!<sup>39</sup> "For I say to you, from now on you will not see Me until you say, 'BLESSED IS HE WHO COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD!'" (Matthew 23:1-39 NASB)

**Mk. 12: 38-40**

In His teaching He was saying: "Beware of the scribes who like to walk around in long robes, and *like* respectful greetings in the market places,<sup>39</sup> and chief seats in the synagogues and places of honor at banquets,<sup>40</sup> who devour widows' houses, and for appearance's sake offer long prayers; these will receive greater condemnation." (Mark 12:38-40 NASB)

**Lk. 20: 45-47**

And while all the people were listening, He said to the disciples,<sup>46</sup> "Beware of the scribes, who like to walk around in long robes, and love respectful greetings in the market places, and chief seats in the synagogues and places of honor at banquets,<sup>47</sup> who devour widows' houses, and for appearance's sake offer long prayers. These will receive greater condemnation." (Luke 20:45-47 NASB)

**L. Jesus Praises the Poor Widow— Mk. 12: 41-44; Lk. 21: 1-4**

**Mk. 12: 41-44**

And He sat down opposite the treasury, and *began* observing how the people were putting money into the treasury; and many rich people were putting in large sums.<sup>42</sup> A poor widow came and put in two small copper coins, which amount to a cent.<sup>43</sup> Calling His disciples to Him, He said to them, "Truly I say to you, this poor widow put in more than all the contributors to the treasury;<sup>44</sup> for they all put in out of their surplus, but she, out of her poverty, put in all she owned, all she had to live on." (Mark 12:41-44 NASB)

**Lk. 21: 1-4**

And He looked up and saw the rich putting their gifts into the treasury.<sup>2</sup> And He saw a poor widow putting in two small copper coins.<sup>3</sup> And He said, "Truly I say to you, this poor widow put in more than all *of them*;<sup>4</sup> for they all out of their surplus put into the offering; but she out of her poverty put in all that she had to live on." (Luke 21:1-4 NASB)

**M. The Sixth Great Discourse in Matthew—The Olivet Discourse (Matt. 24: 1—25: 46)**

**1. Jesus predicts the destruction of Jerusalem and His second coming—Matt. 24: 1-42; Mk. 13: 1-33; Lk. 21: 5-36**

**a. The disciples' question (Matt. 24: 1-3; Mk. 13: 1-4; Lk. 21: 5-7)**

**Matt. 24: 1-3**

Jesus came out from the temple and was going away when His disciples came up to point out the temple buildings to Him.<sup>2</sup> And He said to them, "Do you not see all these things? Truly I say to you, not one stone here will be left upon another, which will not be torn down."<sup>3</sup> As He was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things happen, and what *will be* the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?" (Matthew 24:1-3 NASB)

**Mk. 13: 1-4**

As He was going out of the temple, one of His disciples said to Him, "Teacher, behold what wonderful stones and what wonderful buildings!"<sup>2</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Do you see these great buildings? Not one stone will be left upon another which will not be torn down."<sup>3</sup> As He was sitting on the Mount of Olives opposite the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew were questioning

Him privately, <sup>4</sup> "Tell us, when will these things be, and what *will be* the sign when all these things are going to be fulfilled?" (Mark 13:1-4 NASB)

**Lk. 21: 5-7**

And while some were talking about the temple, that it was adorned with beautiful stones and votive gifts, He said, <sup>6</sup> "As for these things which you are looking at, the days will come in which there will not be left one stone upon another which will not be torn down." <sup>7</sup> They questioned Him, saying, "Teacher, when therefore will these things happen? And what *will be* the sign when these things are about to take place?" (Luke 21:5-7 NASB)

**b. Preliminary signs (Matt. 24: 4-14; Mk. 13: 5-13; Lk. 21: 8-19)**

**Matt. 24: 4-14**

And Jesus answered and said to them, "See to it that no one misleads you. <sup>5</sup> "For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will mislead many. <sup>6</sup> "You will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not frightened, for *those things* must take place, but *that* is not yet the end. <sup>7</sup> "For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes. <sup>8</sup> "But all these things are *merely* the beginning of birth pangs. <sup>9</sup> "Then they will deliver you to tribulation, and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name. <sup>10</sup> "At that time many will fall away and will betray one another and hate one another. <sup>11</sup> "Many false prophets will arise and will mislead many. <sup>12</sup> "Because lawlessness is increased, most people's love will grow cold. <sup>13</sup> "But the one who endures to the end, he will be saved. <sup>14</sup> "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come. (Matthew 24:4-14 NASB)

**Mk. 13: 5-13**

And Jesus began to say to them, "See to it that no one misleads you. <sup>6</sup> "Many will come in My name, saying, 'I am *He!*' and will mislead many. <sup>7</sup> "When you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be frightened; *those things* must take place; but *that is* not yet the end. <sup>8</sup> "For nation will rise up against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will *also* be famines. These things are *merely* the beginning of birth pangs. <sup>9</sup> "But be on your guard; for they will deliver you to *the* courts, and you will be flogged in *the* synagogues, and you will stand before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them. <sup>10</sup> "The gospel must first be preached to all the nations. <sup>11</sup> "When they arrest you and hand you over, do not worry beforehand about what you are to say, but say whatever is given you in that hour; for it is not you who speak, but *it is* the Holy Spirit. <sup>12</sup> "Brother will betray brother to death, and a father *his* child; and children will rise up against parents and have them put to death. <sup>13</sup> "You will be hated by all because of My name, but the one who endures to the end, he will be saved. (Mark 13:5-13 NASB)

**Lk. 21: 8-19**

And He said, "See to it that you are not misled; for many will come in My name, saying, 'I am *He,*' and, 'The time is near.' Do not go after them. <sup>9</sup> "When you hear of wars and disturbances, do not be terrified; for these things must take place first, but the end *does not follow* immediately." <sup>10</sup> Then He continued by saying to them, "Nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, <sup>11</sup> and there will be great earthquakes, and in various places plagues and famines; and there will be terrors and great signs from heaven. <sup>12</sup> "But before all these things, they will lay their hands on you and will persecute you, delivering you to the synagogues and prisons, bringing you before kings and



governors for My name's sake. <sup>13</sup> "It will lead to an opportunity for your testimony. <sup>14</sup> "So make up your minds not to prepare beforehand to defend yourselves; <sup>15</sup> for I will give you utterance and wisdom which none of your opponents will be able to resist or refute. <sup>16</sup> "But you will be betrayed even by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and they will put *some* of you to death, <sup>17</sup> and you will be hated by all because of My name. <sup>18</sup> "Yet not a hair of your head will perish. <sup>19</sup> "By your endurance you will gain your lives. (Luke 21:8-19 NASB)

***c. The destruction of Jerusalem—Matt. 24: 15-25; Mk. 13: 14-23; Lk. 21: 20-24***

***Matt. 24: 15-25***

"Therefore when you see the ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), <sup>16</sup> then those who are in Judea must flee to the mountains. <sup>17</sup> "Whoever is on the housetop must not go down to get the things out that are in his house. <sup>18</sup> "Whoever is in the field must not turn back to get his cloak. <sup>19</sup> "But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! <sup>20</sup> "But pray that your flight will not be in the winter, or on a Sabbath. <sup>21</sup> "For then there will be a great tribulation, such as has not occurred since the beginning of the world until now, nor ever will. <sup>22</sup> "Unless those days had been cut short, no life would have been saved; but for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short. <sup>23</sup> "Then if anyone says to you, 'Behold, here is the Christ,' or 'There *He is*,' do not believe *him*. <sup>24</sup> "For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will show great signs and wonders, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect. <sup>25</sup> "Behold, I have told you in advance. (Matthew 24:15-25 NASB)

***Mk. 13: 14-23***

"But when you see the ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION standing where it should not be (let the reader understand), then those who are in Judea must flee to the mountains. <sup>15</sup> "The one who is on the housetop must not go down, or go in to get anything out of his house; <sup>16</sup> and the one who is in the field must not turn back to get his coat. <sup>17</sup> "But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! <sup>18</sup> "But pray that it may not happen in the winter. <sup>19</sup> "For those days will be a *time of* tribulation such as has not occurred since the beginning of the creation which God created until now, and never will. <sup>20</sup> "Unless the Lord had shortened *those* days, no life would have been saved; but for the sake of the elect, whom He chose, He shortened the days. <sup>21</sup> "And then if anyone says to you, 'Behold, here is the Christ'; or, 'Behold, *He is there*'; do not believe *him*; <sup>22</sup> for false Christs and false prophets will arise, and will show signs and wonders, in order to lead astray, if possible, the elect. <sup>23</sup> "But take heed; behold, I have told you everything in advance. (Mark 13:14-23 NASB)

***Lk. 21: 20-24***

"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then recognize that her desolation is near. <sup>21</sup> "Then those who are in Judea must flee to the mountains, and those who are in the midst of the city must leave, and those who are in the country must not enter the city; <sup>22</sup> because these are days of vengeance, so that all things which are written will be fulfilled. <sup>23</sup> "Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days; for there will be great distress upon the land and wrath to this people; <sup>24</sup> and they will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations; and Jerusalem will be trampled under foot by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. (Luke 21:20-24 NASB)

***d. The second coming of Christ and the end of the age—Matt. 24: 26-31; Mk. 13: 24-27; Lk. 21: 25-28***

***Matt. 24: 26-31***

"So if they say to you, 'Behold, He is in the wilderness,' do not go out, *or*, 'Behold, He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe *them*.<sup>27</sup> "For just as the lightning comes from the east and flashes even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be.<sup>28</sup> "Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.<sup>29</sup> "But immediately after the tribulation of those days THE SUN WILL BE DARKENED, AND THE MOON WILL NOT GIVE ITS LIGHT, AND THE STARS WILL FALL from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.<sup>30</sup> "And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the SON OF MAN COMING ON THE CLOUDS OF THE SKY with power and great glory.<sup>31</sup> "And He will send forth His angels with A GREAT TRUMPET and THEY WILL GATHER TOGETHER His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other. (Matthew 24:26-31 NASB)

***Mk. 13: 24-27***

"But in those days, after that tribulation, THE SUN WILL BE DARKENED AND THE MOON WILL NOT GIVE ITS LIGHT,<sup>25</sup> AND THE STARS WILL BE FALLING from heaven, and the powers that are in the heavens will be shaken.<sup>26</sup> "Then they will see THE SON OF MAN COMING IN CLOUDS with great power and glory.<sup>27</sup> "And then He will send forth the angels, and will gather together His elect from the four winds, from the farthest end of the earth to the farthest end of heaven. (Mark 13:24-27 NASB)

***Lk. 21: 25-28***

"There will be signs in sun and moon and stars, and on the earth dismay among nations, in perplexity at the roaring of the sea and the waves,<sup>26</sup> men fainting from fear and the expectation of the things which are coming upon the world; for the powers of the heavens will be shaken.<sup>27</sup> "Then they will see THE SON OF MAN COMING IN A CLOUD with power and great glory.<sup>28</sup> "But when these things begin to take place, straighten up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near." (Luke 21:25-28 NASB)

***e. The parable of the fig tree—Matt. 24: 32-35; Mk. 13: 28-31; Lk. 21: 29-33***

***Matt. 24: 32-35***

"Now learn the parable from the fig tree: when its branch has already become tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near;<sup>33</sup> so, you too, when you see all these things, recognize that He is near, *right* at the door.<sup>34</sup> "Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place.<sup>35</sup> "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away. (Matthew 24:32-35 NASB)

***Mk. 13: 28-31***

"Now learn the parable from the fig tree: when its branch has already become tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near.<sup>29</sup> "Even so, you too, when you see these things happening, recognize that He is near, *right* at the door.<sup>30</sup> "Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place.<sup>31</sup> "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away. (Mark 13:28-31 NASB)

**Lk. 21: 29-33**

Then He told them a parable: "Behold the fig tree and all the trees;<sup>30</sup> as soon as they put forth *leaves*, you see it and know for yourselves that summer is now near.<sup>31</sup> "So you also, when you see these things happening, recognize that the kingdom of God is near.<sup>32</sup> "Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all things take place.<sup>33</sup> "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away. (Luke 21:29-33 NASB)

**f. The need for readiness—Matt. 24: 36-42; Mk. 13: 32-33; Lk. 21: 34-36**

**Matt. 24: 36-42**

"But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.<sup>37</sup> "For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah.<sup>38</sup> "For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,<sup>39</sup> and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be.<sup>40</sup> "Then there will be two men in the field; one will be taken and one will be left.<sup>41</sup> "Two women *will be* grinding at the mill; one will be taken and one will be left.<sup>42</sup> "Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming. (Matthew 24:36-42 NASB)

**Mk. 13: 32-33**

"But of that day or hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father *alone*.<sup>33</sup> "Take heed, keep on the alert; for you do not know when the *appointed* time will come. (Mark 13:32-33 NASB)

**Lk. 21: 34-36**

"Be on guard, so that your hearts will not be weighted down with dissipation and drunkenness and the worries of life, and that day will not come on you suddenly like a trap;<sup>35</sup> for it will come upon all those who dwell on the face of all the earth.<sup>36</sup> "But keep on the alert at all times, praying that you may have strength to escape all these things that are about to take place, and to stand before the Son of Man." (Luke 21:34-36 NASB)

**2. Parables preparing the disciples for the second coming of Christ—Matt. 24: 43—25: 46**

**b. The parable of the sensible slave and the evil slave—Matt. 24: 45-51; Mk. 13: 34-37**

**Matt. 24: 45-51**

"Who then is the faithful and sensible slave whom his master put in charge of his household to give them their food at the proper time?<sup>46</sup> "Blessed is that slave whom his master finds so doing when he comes.<sup>47</sup> "Truly I say to you that he will put him in charge of all his possessions.<sup>48</sup> "But if that evil slave says in his heart, 'My master is not coming for a long time,'<sup>49</sup> and begins to beat his fellow slaves and eat and drink with drunkards;<sup>50</sup> the master of that slave will come on a day when he does not expect *him* and at an hour which he does not know,<sup>51</sup> and will cut him in pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 24:45-51 NASB)

**Mk. 13: 34-37**

"It is like a man away on a journey, *who* upon leaving his house and putting his slaves in charge, *assigning* to each one his task, also commanded the doorkeeper to stay on the alert.<sup>35</sup> "Therefore, be on the alert-- for you do not know when the master of the house is coming, whether in the evening, at midnight, or when the rooster crows, or in the morning--<sup>36</sup> in case he should come suddenly and find you asleep.<sup>37</sup> "What I say to you I say to all, 'Be on the alert!'" (Mark 13:34-37 NASB)

**O. The Chief Priests, Scribes, and Elders Plot to Kill Jesus—Mat. 26: 1-5; Mk. 14: 1-2; Lk. 22: 1-2**

**Mat. 26: 1-5**

When Jesus had finished all these words, He said to His disciples,<sup>2</sup> "You know that after two days the Passover is coming, and the Son of Man is *to be* handed over for crucifixion."<sup>3</sup> Then the chief priests and the elders of the people were gathered together in the court of the high priest, named Caiaphas;<sup>4</sup> and they plotted together to seize Jesus by stealth and kill Him.<sup>5</sup> But they were saying, "Not during the festival, otherwise a riot might occur among the people." (Matthew 26:1-5 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 1-2**

Now the Passover and Unleavened Bread were two days away; and the chief priests and the scribes were seeking how to seize Him by stealth and kill *Him*;<sup>2</sup> for they were saying, "Not during the festival, otherwise there might be a riot of the people." (Mark 14:1-2 NASB)

**Lk. 22: 1-2**

Now the Feast of Unleavened Bread, which is called the Passover, was approaching.<sup>2</sup> The chief priests and the scribes were seeking how they might put Him to death; for they were afraid of the people. (Luke 22:1-2 NASB)

**P. Jesus Anointed for Burial—Matt. 26: 6-13; Mk. 14: 3-9; Jn. 12: 1-11**

**Matt. 26: 6-13**

Now when Jesus was in Bethany, at the home of Simon the leper,<sup>7</sup> a woman came to Him with an alabaster vial of very costly perfume, and she poured it on His head as He reclined *at the table*.<sup>8</sup> But the disciples were indignant when they saw *this*, and said, "Why this waste?<sup>9</sup> "For this *perfume* might have been sold for a high price and *the money* given to the poor."<sup>10</sup> But Jesus, aware of this, said to them, "Why do you bother the woman? For she has done a good deed to Me.<sup>11</sup> "For you always have the poor with you; but you do not always have Me.<sup>12</sup> "For when she poured this perfume on My body, she did it to prepare Me for burial.<sup>13</sup> "Truly I say to you, wherever this gospel is preached in the whole world, what this woman has done will also be spoken of in memory of her." (Matthew 26:6-13 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 3-9**

While He was in Bethany at the home of Simon the leper, and reclining *at the table*, there came a woman with an alabaster vial of very costly perfume of pure nard; *and* she broke the vial and poured it over His head.<sup>4</sup> But some were indignantly *remarking* to one another, "Why has this perfume been wasted?<sup>5</sup> "For this perfume might have been sold for over three hundred denarii, and *the money* given to the poor." And they were scolding her.<sup>6</sup> But Jesus said, "Let her alone; why do you bother her?"

She has done a good deed to Me. <sup>7</sup> "For you always have the poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them; but you do not always have Me. <sup>8</sup> "She has done what she could; she has anointed My body beforehand for the burial. <sup>9</sup> "Truly I say to you, wherever the gospel is preached in the whole world, what this woman has done will also be spoken of in memory of her." (Mark 14:3-9 NASB)

***Jn. 12: 1-11***

Jesus, therefore, six days before the Passover, came to Bethany where Lazarus was, whom Jesus had raised from the dead. <sup>2</sup> So they made Him a supper there, and Martha was serving; but Lazarus was one of those reclining *at the table* with Him. <sup>3</sup> Mary then took a pound of very costly perfume of pure nard, and anointed the feet of Jesus and wiped His feet with her hair; and the house was filled with the fragrance of the perfume. <sup>4</sup> But Judas Iscariot, one of His disciples, who was intending to betray Him, said, <sup>5</sup> "Why was this perfume not sold for three hundred denarii and given to poor *people*?" <sup>6</sup> Now he said this, not because he was concerned about the poor, but because he was a thief, and as he had the money box, he used to pilfer what was put into it. <sup>7</sup> Therefore Jesus said, "Let her alone, so that she may keep it for the day of My burial. <sup>8</sup> "For you always have the poor with you, but you do not always have Me." <sup>9</sup> The large crowd of the Jews then learned that He was there; and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might also see Lazarus, whom He raised from the dead. <sup>10</sup> But the chief priests planned to put Lazarus to death also; <sup>11</sup> because on account of him many of the Jews were going away and were believing in Jesus. (John 12:1-11 NASB)

***Q. Judas Iscariot Bargains with the Chief Priests over the Betrayal of Jesus—Matt. 26: 14-16; Mk. 14: 10-11; Lk. 22: 3-6***

***Matt. 26: 14-16***

Then one of the twelve, named Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests <sup>15</sup> and said, "What are you willing to give me to betray Him to you?" And they weighed out thirty pieces of silver to him. <sup>16</sup> From then on he *began* looking for a good opportunity to betray Jesus. (Matthew 26:14-16 NASB)

***Mk. 14: 10-11***

Then Judas Iscariot, who was one of the twelve, went off to the chief priests in order to betray Him to them. <sup>11</sup> They were glad when they heard *this*, and promised to give him money. And he *began* seeking how to betray Him at an opportune time. (Mark 14:10-11 NASB)

***Lk. 22: 3-6***

And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, belonging to the number of the twelve. <sup>4</sup> And he went away and discussed with the chief priests and officers how he might betray Him to them. <sup>5</sup> They were glad and agreed to give him money. <sup>6</sup> So he consented, and *began* seeking a good opportunity to betray Him to them apart from the crowd. (Luke 22:3-6 NASB)

***R. Jesus' Last Passover with the Apostles and His Institution of the Lord's Supper—Matt. 26: 17-25; Mk. 14: 12-31; Lk. 22: 7-38; Jn. 13—17***

***1. Preparation for the Passover—Matt. 26: 17-19; Mk. 14: 12-16; Lk. 22: 7-13***

***Matt. 26: 17-19***

Now on the first *day* of Unleavened Bread the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "Where do You want us to prepare for You to eat the Passover?" <sup>18</sup> And He said, "Go into the city to a certain man,

and say to him, "The Teacher says, "My time is near; I *am to* keep the Passover at your house with My disciples.""<sup>19</sup> The disciples did as Jesus had directed them; and they prepared the Passover. (Matthew 26:17-19 NASB)

***Mk. 14: 12-16***

On the first day of Unleavened Bread, when the Passover *lamb* was being sacrificed, His disciples said to Him, "Where do You want us to go and prepare for You to eat the Passover?"<sup>13</sup> And He sent two of His disciples and said to them, "Go into the city, and a man will meet you carrying a pitcher of water; follow him;<sup>14</sup> and wherever he enters, say to the owner of the house, 'The Teacher says, "Where is My guest room in which I may eat the Passover with My disciples?"'<sup>15</sup> And he himself will show you a large upper room furnished *and* ready; prepare for us there."<sup>16</sup> The disciples went out and came to the city, and found *it* just as He had told them; and they prepared the Passover. (Mark 14:12-16 NASB)

***Lk. 22: 7-13***

Then came the *first* day of Unleavened Bread on which the Passover *lamb* had to be sacrificed.<sup>8</sup> And Jesus sent Peter and John, saying, "Go and prepare the Passover for us, so that we may eat it."<sup>9</sup> They said to Him, "Where do You want us to prepare it?"<sup>10</sup> And He said to them, "When you have entered the city, a man will meet you carrying a pitcher of water; follow him into the house that he enters.<sup>11</sup> "And you shall say to the owner of the house, 'The Teacher says to you, "Where is the guest room in which I may eat the Passover with My disciples?"'<sup>12</sup> "And he will show you a large, furnished upper room; prepare it there."<sup>13</sup> And they left and found *everything* just as He had told them; and they prepared the Passover. (Luke 22:7-13 NASB)

***2. The model of servant-leadership—Lk. 22: 24-30***

And there arose also a dispute among them *as to* which one of them was regarded to be greatest.<sup>25</sup> And He said to them, "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who have authority over them are called 'Benefactors.'<sup>26</sup> "But *it is* not this way with you, but the one who is the greatest among you must become like the youngest, and the leader like the servant.<sup>27</sup> "For who is greater, the one who reclines *at the table* or the one who serves? Is it not the one who reclines *at the table*? But I am among you as the one who serves.<sup>28</sup> "You are those who have stood by Me in My trials;<sup>29</sup> and just as My Father has granted Me a kingdom, I grant you<sup>30</sup> that you may eat and drink at My table in My kingdom, and you will sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel. (Luke 22:24-30 NASB)

***3. Jesus washes the disciples' feet—Jn. 13: 1-17***

Now before the Feast of the Passover, Jesus knowing that His hour had come that He would depart out of this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end.<sup>2</sup> During supper, the devil having already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon, to betray Him,<sup>3</sup> *Jesus*, knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He had come forth from God and was going back to God,<sup>4</sup> got up from supper, and laid aside His garments; and taking a towel, He girded Himself.<sup>5</sup> Then He poured water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded.<sup>6</sup> So He came to Simon Peter. He said to Him, "Lord, do You wash my feet?"<sup>7</sup> Jesus answered and said to him, "What I do you do not realize now, but you will understand hereafter."<sup>8</sup> Peter said to Him, "Never shall You wash my feet!" Jesus answered him, "If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me."<sup>9</sup> Simon Peter said to Him, "Lord, *then wash* not only my feet, but also my hands and my head."<sup>10</sup> Jesus said to him,

"He who has bathed needs only to wash his feet, but is completely clean; and you are clean, but not all of you." <sup>11</sup> For He knew the one who was betraying Him; for this reason He said, "Not all of you are clean." <sup>12</sup> So when He had washed their feet, and taken His garments and reclined *at the table* again, He said to them, "Do you know what I have done to you?" <sup>13</sup> "You call Me Teacher and Lord; and you are right, for *so* I am." <sup>14</sup> "If I then, the Lord and the Teacher, washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet." <sup>15</sup> "For I gave you an example that you also should do as I did to you." <sup>16</sup> "Truly, truly, I say to you, a slave is not greater than his master, nor *is* one who is sent greater than the one who sent him." <sup>17</sup> "If you know these things, you are blessed if you do them. (John 13:1-17 NASB)

#### **4. Jesus Announces His Betrayal—Matt. 26: 21-25; Mk. 14: 17-21; Lk. 22: 21-23; Jn. 13: 18-26**

##### **Matt. 26: 21-25**

As they were eating, He said, "Truly I say to you that one of you will betray Me." <sup>22</sup> Being deeply grieved, they each one began to say to Him, "Surely not I, Lord?" <sup>23</sup> And He answered, "He who dipped his hand with Me in the bowl is the one who will betray Me." <sup>24</sup> "The Son of Man *is to* go, just as it is written of Him; but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had not been born." <sup>25</sup> And Judas, who was betraying Him, said, "Surely it is not I, Rabbi?" Jesus said to him, "You have said *it* yourself." (Matthew 26:21-25 NAU)

##### **Mk. 14: 17-21**

When it was evening He came with the twelve. <sup>18</sup> As they were reclining *at the table* and eating, Jesus said, "Truly I say to you that one of you will betray Me-- one who is eating with Me." <sup>19</sup> They began to be grieved and to say to Him one by one, "Surely not I?" <sup>20</sup> And He said to them, "*It is* one of the twelve, one who dips with Me in the bowl." <sup>21</sup> "For the Son of Man *is to* go just as it is written of Him; but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! *It would have been* good for that man if he had not been born." (Mark 14:17-21 NASB)

##### **Lk. 22: 21-23**

"But behold, the hand of the one betraying Me is with Mine on the table." <sup>22</sup> "For indeed, the Son of Man is going as it has been determined; but woe to that man by whom He is betrayed!" <sup>23</sup> And they began to discuss among themselves which one of them it might be who was going to do this thing. (Luke 22:21-23 NASB)

##### **Jn. 13: 18-26**

"I do not speak of all of you. I know the ones I have chosen; but *it is* that the Scripture may be fulfilled, 'HE WHO EATS MY BREAD HAS LIFTED UP HIS HEEL AGAINST ME.' <sup>19</sup> "From now on I am telling you before *it* comes to pass, so that when it does occur, you may believe that I am *He*." <sup>20</sup> "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who receives whomever I send receives Me; and he who receives Me receives Him who sent Me." <sup>21</sup> When Jesus had said this, He became troubled in spirit, and testified and said, "Truly, truly, I say to you, that one of you will betray Me." <sup>22</sup> The disciples *began* looking at one another, at a loss *to know* of which one He was speaking. <sup>23</sup> There was reclining on Jesus' bosom one of His disciples, whom Jesus loved. <sup>24</sup> So Simon Peter gestured to him, and said to him, "Tell *us* who it is of whom He is speaking." <sup>25</sup> He, leaning back thus on Jesus' bosom, said to Him, "Lord, who is it?" <sup>26</sup> Jesus then answered, "That is the one for whom I shall dip the morsel and give it to him." So

when He had dipped the morsel, He took and gave it to Judas, *the son* of Simon Iscariot. (John 13:18-26 NASB)

**5. The institution of the Lord's Supper —Matt. 26: 26-30; Mk. 14: 22-26; Lk. 22: 14-20**

**Matt. 26: 26-30**

While they were eating, Jesus took *some* bread, and after a blessing, He broke *it* and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, "Take, eat; this is My body." <sup>27</sup> And when He had taken a cup and given thanks, He gave *it* to them, saying, "Drink from it, all of you; <sup>28</sup> for this is My blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for forgiveness of sins. <sup>29</sup> "But I say to you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom." <sup>30</sup> After singing a hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives. (Matthew 26:26-30 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 22-26**

While they were eating, He took *some* bread, and after a blessing He broke *it*, and gave *it* to them, and said, "Take *it*; this is My body." <sup>23</sup> And when He had taken a cup *and* given thanks, He gave *it* to them, and they all drank from it. <sup>24</sup> And He said to them, "This is My blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many. <sup>25</sup> "Truly I say to you, I will never again drink of the fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God." <sup>26</sup> After singing a hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives. (Mark 14:22-26 NASB)

**Lk. 22: 14-20**

When the hour had come, He reclined *at the table*, and the apostles with Him. <sup>15</sup> And He said to them, "I have earnestly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer; <sup>16</sup> for I say to you, I shall never again eat it until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God." <sup>17</sup> And when He had taken a cup *and* given thanks, He said, "Take this and share it among yourselves; <sup>18</sup> for I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine from now on until the kingdom of God comes." <sup>19</sup> And when He had taken *some* bread *and* given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me." <sup>20</sup> And in the same way *He took* the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood. (Luke 22:14-20 NASB)

**6. Jesus predicts the failure of the disciples and Peter's betrayal—Matt. 26: 31-35; Mk. 14: 27-31; Lk. 22: 31-34; Jn. 13: 36-38**

**Matt. 26: 31-35**

Then Jesus said to them, "You will all fall away because of Me this night, for it is written, 'I WILL STRIKE DOWN THE SHEPHERD, AND THE SHEEP OF THE FLOCK SHALL BE SCATTERED.' <sup>32</sup> "But after I have been raised, I will go ahead of you to Galilee." <sup>33</sup> But Peter said to Him, "*Even* though all may fall away because of You, I will never fall away." <sup>34</sup> Jesus said to him, "Truly I say to you that this *very* night, before a rooster crows, you will deny Me three times." <sup>35</sup> Peter said to Him, "Even if I have to die with You, I will not deny You." All the disciples said the same thing too. (Matthew 26:31-35 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 27-31**

And Jesus said to them, "You will all fall away, because it is written, 'I WILL STRIKE DOWN THE SHEPHERD, AND THE SHEEP SHALL BE SCATTERED.' <sup>28</sup> "But after I have been raised, I will go ahead of you to Galilee." <sup>29</sup> But Peter said to Him, "*Even* though all may fall away, yet I will not."



<sup>30</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Truly I say to you, that this very night, before a rooster crows twice, you yourself will deny Me three times." <sup>31</sup> But *Peter* kept saying insistently, "Even if I have to die with You, I will not deny You!" And they all were saying the same thing also. (Mark 14:27-31 NASB)

**Lk. 22: 31-34**

"Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has demanded *permission* to sift you like wheat; <sup>32</sup> but I have prayed for you, that your faith may not fail; and you, when once you have turned again, strengthen your brothers." <sup>33</sup> But he said to Him, "Lord, with You I am ready to go both to prison and to death!" <sup>34</sup> And He said, "I say to you, Peter, the rooster will not crow today until you have denied three times that you know Me." (Luke 22:31-34 NASB)

**Jn. 13: 36-38**

Simon Peter said to Him, "Lord, where are You going?" Jesus answered, "Where I go, you cannot follow Me now; but you will follow later." <sup>37</sup> Peter said to Him, "Lord, why can I not follow You right now? I will lay down my life for You." <sup>38</sup> Jesus answered, "Will you lay down your life for Me? Truly, truly, I say to you, a rooster will not crow until you deny Me three times. (John 13:36-38 NASB)

**7. Jesus Predicts His Execution along with Criminals—Lk. 22: 35-39**

And He said to them, "When I sent you out without money belt and bag and sandals, you did not lack anything, did you?" They said, "No, nothing." <sup>36</sup> And He said to them, "But now, whoever has a money belt is to take it along, likewise also a bag, and whoever has no sword is to sell his coat and buy one." <sup>37</sup> "For I tell you that this which is written must be fulfilled in Me, 'AND HE WAS NUMBERED WITH TRANSGRESSORS'; for that which refers to Me has *its* fulfillment." <sup>38</sup> They said, "Lord, look, here are two swords." And He said to them, "It is enough." <sup>39</sup> And He came out and proceeded as was His custom to the Mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed Him. (Luke 22:35-39 NASB)

**S. Jesus' Severe Trial of Prayer in the Garden of Gethsemane—Matt. 26: 36-44; Mk. 14: 32-40; Lk. 22: 39-46**

**Matt. 26: 36-44**

Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to His disciples, "Sit here while I go over there and pray." <sup>37</sup> And He took with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be grieved and distressed. <sup>38</sup> Then He said to them, "My soul is deeply grieved, to the point of death; remain here and keep watch with Me." <sup>39</sup> And He went a little beyond *them*, and fell on His face and prayed, saying, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me; yet not as I will, but as You will." <sup>40</sup> And He came to the disciples and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, "So, you *men* could not keep watch with Me for one hour? <sup>41</sup> "Keep watching and praying that you may not enter into temptation; the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak." <sup>42</sup> He went away again a second time and prayed, saying, "My Father, if this cannot pass away unless I drink it, Your will be done." <sup>43</sup> Again He came and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy. <sup>44</sup> And He left them again, and went away and prayed a third time, saying the same thing once more. (Matthew 26:36-44 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 32-40**

They came to a place named Gethsemane; and He said to His disciples, "Sit here until I have prayed."<sup>33</sup> And He took with Him Peter and James and John, and began to be very distressed and troubled.<sup>34</sup> And He said to them, "My soul is deeply grieved to the point of death; remain here and keep watch."<sup>35</sup> And He went a little beyond *them*, and fell to the ground and *began* to pray that if it were possible, the hour might pass Him by.<sup>36</sup> And He was saying, "Abba! Father! All things are possible for You; remove this cup from Me; yet not what I will, but what You will."<sup>37</sup> And He came and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, "Simon, are you asleep? Could you not keep watch for one hour?"<sup>38</sup> "Keep watching and praying that you may not come into temptation; the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."<sup>39</sup> Again He went away and prayed, saying the same words.<sup>40</sup> And again He came and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy; and they did not know what to answer Him. (Mark 14:32-40 NASB)

**Lk. 22: 39-46**

And He came out and proceeded as was His custom to the Mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed Him.<sup>40</sup> When He arrived at the place, He said to them, "Pray that you may not enter into temptation."<sup>41</sup> And He withdrew from them about a stone's throw, and He knelt down and *began* to pray,<sup>42</sup> saying, "Father, if You are willing, remove this cup from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done."<sup>43</sup> Now an angel from heaven appeared to Him, strengthening Him.<sup>44</sup> And being in agony He was praying very fervently; and His sweat became like drops of blood, falling down upon the ground.<sup>45</sup> When He rose from prayer, He came to the disciples and found them sleeping from sorrow,<sup>46</sup> and said to them, "Why are you sleeping? Get up and pray that you may not enter into temptation." (Luke 22:39-46 NASB)

**T. Jesus Betrayed by Judas in the Garden of Gethsemane—Matt. 26: 45-56; Mk. 14: 43-52; Lk. 22: 47-54; Jn. 18: 2-11**

**Matt. 26: 45-56**

Then He came to the disciples and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and resting? Behold, the hour is at hand and the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of sinners.<sup>46</sup> "Get up, let us be going; behold, the one who betrays Me is at hand!"<sup>47</sup> While He was still speaking, behold, Judas, one of the twelve, came up accompanied by a large crowd with swords and clubs, *who came* from the chief priests and elders of the people.<sup>48</sup> Now he who was betraying Him gave them a sign, saying, "Whomever I kiss, He is the one; seize Him."<sup>49</sup> Immediately Judas went to Jesus and said, "Hail, Rabbi!" and kissed Him.<sup>50</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Friend, *do* what you have come for." Then they came and laid hands on Jesus and seized Him.<sup>51</sup> And behold, one of those who were with Jesus reached and drew out his sword, and struck the slave of the high priest and cut off his ear.<sup>52</sup> Then Jesus said to him, "Put your sword back into its place; for all those who take up the sword shall perish by the sword."<sup>53</sup> "Or do you think that I cannot appeal to My Father, and He will at once put at My disposal more than twelve legions of angels?"<sup>54</sup> "How then will the Scriptures be fulfilled, *which say* that it must happen this way?"<sup>55</sup> At that time Jesus said to the crowds, "Have you come out with swords and clubs to arrest Me as *you would* against a robber? Every day I used to sit in the temple teaching and you did not seize Me."<sup>56</sup> "But all this has taken place to fulfill the Scriptures of the prophets." Then all the disciples left Him and fled. (Matthew 26:45-56 NASB)

**Mk. 14: 43-52**

Immediately while He was still speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, came up accompanied by a crowd with swords and clubs, *who were* from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.<sup>44</sup> Now he who was betraying Him had given them a signal, saying, "Whomever I kiss, He is the one; seize Him and lead Him away under guard."<sup>45</sup> After coming, Judas immediately went to Him, saying, "Rabbi!" and kissed Him.<sup>46</sup> They laid hands on Him and seized Him.<sup>47</sup> But one of those who stood by drew his sword, and struck the slave of the high priest and cut off his ear.<sup>48</sup> And Jesus said to them, "Have you come out with swords and clubs to arrest Me, as *you would* against a robber?"<sup>49</sup> "Every day I was with you in the temple teaching, and you did not seize Me; but *this has taken place* to fulfill the Scriptures."<sup>50</sup> And they all left Him and fled.<sup>51</sup> A young man was following Him, wearing *nothing but* a linen sheet over *his* naked *body*; and they seized him.<sup>52</sup> But he pulled free of the linen sheet and escaped naked. (Mark 14:43-52 NASB)

**Lk. 22: 47-54**

While He was still speaking, behold, a crowd *came*, and the one called Judas, one of the twelve, was preceding them; and he approached Jesus to kiss Him.<sup>48</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Judas, are you betraying the Son of Man with a kiss?"<sup>49</sup> When those who were around Him saw what was going to happen, they said, "Lord, shall we strike with the sword?"<sup>50</sup> And one of them struck the slave of the high priest and cut off his right ear.<sup>51</sup> But Jesus answered and said, "Stop! No more of this." And He touched his ear and healed him.<sup>52</sup> Then Jesus said to the chief priests and officers of the temple and elders who had come against Him, "Have you come out with swords and clubs as you would against a robber?"<sup>53</sup> "While I was with you daily in the temple, you did not lay hands on Me; but this hour and the power of darkness are yours."<sup>54</sup> Having arrested Him, they led Him *away* and brought Him to the house of the high priest; but Peter was following at a distance. (Luke 22:47-54 NASB)

**Jn. 18: 2-11**

Now Judas also, who was betraying Him, knew the place, for Jesus had often met there with His disciples.<sup>3</sup> Judas then, having received the *Roman* cohort and officers from the chief priests and the Pharisees, came there with lanterns and torches and weapons.<sup>4</sup> So Jesus, knowing all the things that were coming upon Him, went forth and said to them, "Whom do you seek?"<sup>5</sup> They answered Him, "Jesus the Nazarene." He said to them, "I am *He*." And Judas also, who was betraying Him, was standing with them.<sup>6</sup> So when He said to them, "I am *He*," they drew back and fell to the ground.<sup>7</sup> Therefore He again asked them, "Whom do you seek?" And they said, "Jesus the Nazarene."<sup>8</sup> Jesus answered, "I told you that I am *He*; so if you seek Me, let these go their way,"<sup>9</sup> to fulfill the word which He spoke, "Of those whom You have given Me I lost not one."<sup>10</sup> Simon Peter then, having a sword, drew it and struck the high priest's slave, and cut off his right ear; and the slave's name was Malchus.<sup>11</sup> So Jesus said to Peter, "Put the sword into the sheath; the cup which the Father has given Me, shall I not drink it?" (John 18:2-11 NASB)

**U. Christ on Trial before Annas—Jn. 18: 12-14; 19-24**

So the *Roman* cohort and the commander and the officers of the Jews, arrested Jesus and bound Him,<sup>13</sup> and led Him to Annas first; for he was father-in-law of Caiaphas, who was high priest that year.<sup>14</sup> Now Caiaphas was the one who had advised the Jews that it was expedient for one man to die on behalf of the people. (John 18:12-14 NASB)

The high priest then questioned Jesus about His disciples, and about His teaching.<sup>20</sup> Jesus answered him, "I have spoken openly to the world; I always taught in synagogues and in the temple, where all the Jews come together; and I spoke nothing in secret."<sup>21</sup> "Why do you question Me? Question those who have heard what I spoke to them; they know what I said."<sup>22</sup> When He had said this, one of the officers standing nearby struck Jesus, saying, "Is that the way You answer the high priest?"<sup>23</sup> Jesus answered him, "If I have spoken wrongly, testify of the wrong; but if rightly, why do you strike Me?"<sup>24</sup> So Annas sent Him bound to Caiaphas the high priest. (John 18:19-24 NASB)

***V. Peter's Denial of Christ—Matt. 26: 69-75; Mk. 14: 66-72; Lk. 22: 55-62; Jn. 18: 15-18; 25-27***

***Matt. 26: 69-75***

Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard, and a servant-girl came to him and said, "You too were with Jesus the Galilean."<sup>70</sup> But he denied *it* before them all, saying, "I do not know what you are talking about."<sup>71</sup> When he had gone out to the gateway, another *servant-girl* saw him and said to those who were there, "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth."<sup>72</sup> And again he denied *it* with an oath, "I do not know the man."<sup>73</sup> A little later the bystanders came up and said to Peter, "Surely you too are *one* of them; for even the way you talk gives you away."<sup>74</sup> Then he began to curse and swear, "I do not know the man!" And immediately a rooster crowed.<sup>75</sup> And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had said, "Before a rooster crows, you will deny Me three times." And he went out and wept bitterly. (Matthew 26:69-75 NASB)

***Mk. 14: 66-72***

As Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the servant-girls of the high priest came,<sup>67</sup> and seeing Peter warming himself, she looked at him and said, "You also were with Jesus the Nazarene."<sup>68</sup> But he denied *it*, saying, "I neither know nor understand what you are talking about." And he went out onto the porch, and a rooster crowed.<sup>69</sup> The servant-girl saw him, and began once more to say to the bystanders, "This is *one* of them!"<sup>70</sup> But again he denied it. And after a little while the bystanders were again saying to Peter, "Surely you are *one* of them, for you are a Galilean too."<sup>71</sup> But he began to curse and swear, "I do not know this man you are talking about!"<sup>72</sup> Immediately a rooster crowed a second time. And Peter remembered how Jesus had made the remark to him, "Before a rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times." And he began to weep. (Mark 14:66-72 NASB)

***Lk. 22: 55-62***

After they had kindled a fire in the middle of the courtyard and had sat down together, Peter was sitting among them.<sup>56</sup> And a servant-girl, seeing him as he sat in the firelight and looking intently at him, said, "This man was with Him too."<sup>57</sup> But he denied *it*, saying, "Woman, I do not know Him."<sup>58</sup> A little later, another saw him and said, "You are *one* of them too!" But Peter said, "Man, I am not!"<sup>59</sup> After about an hour had passed, another man *began* to insist, saying, "Certainly this man also was with Him, for he is a Galilean too."<sup>60</sup> But Peter said, "Man, I do not know what you are talking about." Immediately, while he was still speaking, a rooster crowed.<sup>61</sup> The Lord turned and looked at Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how He had told him, "Before a rooster crows today, you will deny Me three times."<sup>62</sup> And he went out and wept bitterly. (Luke 22:55-62 NASB)

***Jn. 18: 15-18; 25-27***

Simon Peter was following Jesus, and *so was* another disciple. Now that disciple was known to the high priest, and entered with Jesus into the court of the high priest,<sup>16</sup> but Peter was standing at the

door outside. So the other disciple, who was known to the high priest, went out and spoke to the doorkeeper, and brought Peter in.<sup>17</sup> Then the slave-girl who kept the door said to Peter, "You are not also *one* of this man's disciples, are you?" He said, "I am not."<sup>18</sup> Now the slaves and the officers were standing *there*, having made a charcoal fire, for it was cold and they were warming themselves; and Peter was also with them, standing and warming himself. (John 18:15-18 NASB)

Now Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. So they said to him, "You are not also *one* of His disciples, are you?" He denied *it*, and said, "I am not."<sup>26</sup> One of the slaves of the high priest, being a relative of the one whose ear Peter cut off, said, "Did I not see you in the garden with Him?"<sup>27</sup> Peter then denied *it* again, and immediately a rooster crowed. (John 18:25-27 NASB)

***W. Christ at the First Trial before the Sanhedrin—Matt. 26: 57-68; Mk. 14: 53-65; Lk. 22: 54, 63-65***

***Matt. 26: 57-68***

Those who had seized Jesus led Him away to Caiaphas, the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were gathered together.<sup>58</sup> But Peter was following Him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the high priest, and entered in, and sat down with the officers to see the outcome.<sup>59</sup> Now the chief priests and the whole Council kept trying to obtain false testimony against Jesus, so that they might put Him to death.<sup>60</sup> They did not find *any*, even though many false witnesses came forward. But later on two came forward,<sup>61</sup> and said, "This man stated, 'I am able to destroy the temple of God and to rebuild it in three days.'" <sup>62</sup> The high priest stood up and said to Him, "Do You not answer? What is it that these men are testifying against You?" <sup>63</sup> But Jesus kept silent. And the high priest said to Him, "I adjure You by the living God, that You tell us whether You are the Christ, the Son of God." <sup>64</sup> Jesus said to him, "You have said it *yourself*; nevertheless I tell you, hereafter you will see THE SON OF MAN SITTING AT THE RIGHT HAND OF POWER, and COMING ON THE CLOUDS OF HEAVEN." <sup>65</sup> Then the high priest tore his robes and said, "He has blasphemed! What further need do we have of witnesses? Behold, you have now heard the blasphemy; <sup>66</sup> what do you think?" They answered, "He deserves death!" <sup>67</sup> Then they spat in His face and beat Him with their fists; and others slapped Him, <sup>68</sup> and said, "Prophecy to us, You Christ; who is the one who hit You?" (Matthew 26:57-68 NASB)

***Mk. 14: 53-65***

They led Jesus away to the high priest; and all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes gathered together.<sup>54</sup> Peter had followed Him at a distance, right into the courtyard of the high priest; and he was sitting with the officers and warming himself at the fire.<sup>55</sup> Now the chief priests and the whole Council kept trying to obtain testimony against Jesus to put Him to death, and they were not finding any.<sup>56</sup> For many were giving false testimony against Him, but their testimony was not consistent.<sup>57</sup> Some stood up and *began* to give false testimony against Him, saying, <sup>58</sup> "We heard Him say, 'I will destroy this temple made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands.'" <sup>59</sup> Not even in this respect was their testimony consistent.<sup>60</sup> The high priest stood up *and came* forward and questioned Jesus, saying, "Do You not answer? What is it that these men are testifying against You?" <sup>61</sup> But He kept silent and did not answer. Again the high priest was questioning Him, and saying to Him, "Are You the Christ, the Son of the Blessed *One*?" <sup>62</sup> And Jesus said, "I am; and you shall see THE SON OF MAN SITTING AT THE RIGHT HAND OF POWER, and COMING WITH THE CLOUDS OF HEAVEN." <sup>63</sup> Tearing his clothes, the high priest said, "What further need do we

have of witnesses? <sup>64</sup> "You have heard the blasphemy; how does it seem to you?" And they all condemned Him to be deserving of death. <sup>65</sup> Some began to spit at Him, and to blindfold Him, and to beat Him with their fists, and to say to Him, "Prophecy!" And the officers received Him with slaps *in the face*. (Mark 14:53-65 NASB)

***Lk. 22: 54, 63-65***

Having arrested Him, they led Him *away* and brought Him to the house of the high priest; but Peter was following at a distance. (Luke 22:54 NASB)

Now the men who were holding Jesus in custody were mocking Him and beating Him, <sup>64</sup> and they blindfolded Him and were asking Him, saying, "Prophecy, who is the one who hit You?" <sup>65</sup> And they were saying many other things against Him, blaspheming. (Luke 22:63-65 NASB)

***X. Christ at the Second Trial before the Sanhedrin—Matt. 27: 1; Mk. 15: 1a; Lk. 22: 66-71***

***Matt. 27: 1***

Now when morning came, all the chief priests and the elders of the people conferred together against Jesus to put Him to death; (Matthew 27:1 NASB)

***Mk. 15: 1a***

Early in the morning the chief priests with the elders and scribes and the whole Council, immediately held a consultation; (Mark 15:1a NASB)

***Lk. 22: 66-71***

When it was day, the Council of elders of the people assembled, both chief priests and scribes, and they led Him away to their council *chamber*, saying, <sup>67</sup> "If You are the Christ, tell us." But He said to them, "If I tell you, you will not believe; <sup>68</sup> and if I ask a question, you will not answer. <sup>69</sup> "But from now on THE SON OF MAN WILL BE SEATED AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE power OF GOD." <sup>70</sup> And they all said, "Are You the Son of God, then?" And He said to them, "Yes, I am." <sup>71</sup> Then they said, "What further need do we have of testimony? For we have heard it ourselves from His own mouth." (Luke 22:66-71 NASB)

***Y. Christ Delivered over to Pilate by the Sanhedrin—Matt. 27: 2; 11-14; Mk. 15: 1b-5; Lk. 23: 1-6; Jn. 18: 28-40***

***Matt. 27: 2, 11-14***

and they bound Him, and led Him away and delivered Him to Pilate the governor. (Matthew 27:2 NASB)

Now Jesus stood before the governor, and the governor questioned Him, saying, "Are You the King of the Jews?" And Jesus said to him, "*It is as you say.*" <sup>12</sup> And while He was being accused by the chief priests and elders, He did not answer. <sup>13</sup> Then Pilate said to Him, "Do You not hear how many things they testify against You?" <sup>14</sup> And He did not answer him with regard to even a *single* charge, so the governor was quite amazed. (Matthew 27:11-14 NASB)

**Mk. 15: 1b-5**

and binding Jesus, they led Him away and delivered Him to Pilate.<sup>2</sup> Pilate questioned Him, "Are You the King of the Jews?" And He answered him, "*It is as you say.*"<sup>3</sup> The chief priests *began* to accuse Him harshly.<sup>4</sup> Then Pilate questioned Him again, saying, "Do You not answer? See how many charges they bring against You!"<sup>5</sup> But Jesus made no further answer; so Pilate was amazed. (Mark 15:1-5 NASB)

**Lk. 23: 1-6**

Then the whole body of them got up and brought Him before Pilate.<sup>2</sup> And they began to accuse Him, saying, "We found this man misleading our nation and forbidding to pay taxes to Caesar, and saying that He Himself is Christ, a King."<sup>3</sup> So Pilate asked Him, saying, "Are You the King of the Jews?" And He answered him and said, "*It is as you say.*"<sup>4</sup> Then Pilate said to the chief priests and the crowds, "I find no guilt in this man."<sup>5</sup> But they kept on insisting, saying, "He stirs up the people, teaching all over Judea, starting from Galilee even as far as this place."<sup>6</sup> When Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man was a Galilean. (Luke 23:1-6 NASB)

**Jn. 18: 28-40**

Then they led Jesus from Caiaphas into the Praetorium, and it was early; and they themselves did not enter into the Praetorium so that they would not be defiled, but might eat the Passover.<sup>29</sup> Therefore Pilate went out to them and said, "What accusation do you bring against this Man?"<sup>30</sup> They answered and said to him, "If this Man were not an evildoer, we would not have delivered Him to you."<sup>31</sup> So Pilate said to them, "Take Him yourselves, and judge Him according to your law." The Jews said to him, "We are not permitted to put anyone to death,"<sup>32</sup> to fulfill the word of Jesus which He spoke, signifying by what kind of death He was about to die.<sup>33</sup> Therefore Pilate entered again into the Praetorium, and summoned Jesus and said to Him, "Are You the King of the Jews?"<sup>34</sup> Jesus answered, "Are you saying this on your own initiative, or did others tell you about Me?"<sup>35</sup> Pilate answered, "I am not a Jew, am I? Your own nation and the chief priests delivered You to me; what have You done?"<sup>36</sup> Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not of this world. If My kingdom were of this world, then My servants would be fighting so that I would not be handed over to the Jews; but as it is, My kingdom is not of this realm."<sup>37</sup> Therefore Pilate said to Him, "So You are a king?" Jesus answered, "You say *correctly* that I am a king. For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, to testify to the truth. Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice."<sup>38</sup> Pilate said to Him, "What is truth?" And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews and said to them, "I find no guilt in Him."<sup>39</sup> "But you have a custom that I release someone for you at the Passover; do you wish then that I release for you the King of the Jews?"<sup>40</sup> So they cried out again, saying, "Not this Man, but Barabbas." Now Barabbas was a robber. (John 18:28-40 NASB)

**Z. Christ Delivered over to Herod by Pilate—Lk. 23: 7-12**

And when he learned that He belonged to Herod's jurisdiction, he sent Him to Herod, who himself also was in Jerusalem at that time.<sup>8</sup> Now Herod was very glad when he saw Jesus; for he had wanted to see Him for a long time, because he had been hearing about Him and was hoping to see some sign performed by Him.<sup>9</sup> And he questioned Him at some length; but He answered him nothing.<sup>10</sup> And the chief priests and the scribes were standing there, accusing Him vehemently.<sup>11</sup> And Herod with his soldiers, after treating Him with contempt and mocking Him, dressed Him in a gorgeous robe and sent Him back to Pilate.<sup>12</sup> Now Herod and Pilate became friends with one another that very day; for before they had been enemies with each other. (Luke 23:7-12 NASB)

**AA. Judas' Suicide—Matt. 27: 3-10**

Then when Judas, who had betrayed Him, saw that He had been condemned, he felt remorse and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,<sup>4</sup> saying, "I have sinned by betraying innocent blood." But they said, "What is that to us? See *to that* yourself!"<sup>5</sup> And he threw the pieces of silver into the temple sanctuary and departed; and he went away and hanged himself.<sup>6</sup> The chief priests took the pieces of silver and said, "It is not lawful to put them into the temple treasury, since it is the price of blood."<sup>7</sup> And they conferred together and with the money bought the Potter's Field as a burial place for strangers.<sup>8</sup> For this reason that field has been called the Field of Blood to this day.<sup>9</sup> Then that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet was fulfilled: "AND THEY TOOK THE THIRTY PIECES OF SILVER, THE PRICE OF THE ONE WHOSE PRICE HAD BEEN SET by the sons of Israel;<sup>10</sup> AND THEY GAVE THEM FOR THE POTTER'S FIELD, AS THE LORD DIRECTED ME." (Matthew 27:3-10 NASB)

**BB. Christ Condemned To Be Crucified Rather than Barabbas—Matt. 27: 15-26; Mk. 15: 6-15; Lk. 23: 13-25**

**Matt. 27: 15-26**

Now at *the* feast the governor was accustomed to release for the people *any* one prisoner whom they wanted.<sup>16</sup> At that time they were holding a notorious prisoner, called Barabbas.<sup>17</sup> So when the people gathered together, Pilate said to them, "Whom do you want me to release for you? Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ?"<sup>18</sup> For he knew that because of envy they had handed Him over.<sup>19</sup> While he was sitting on the judgment seat, his wife sent him *a message*, saying, "Have nothing to do with that righteous Man; for last night I suffered greatly in a dream because of Him."<sup>20</sup> But the chief priests and the elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas and to put Jesus to death.<sup>21</sup> But the governor said to them, "Which of the two do you want me to release for you?" And they said, "Barabbas."<sup>22</sup> Pilate said to them, "Then what shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ?" They all said, "Crucify Him!"<sup>23</sup> And he said, "Why, what evil has He done?" But they kept shouting all the more, saying, "Crucify Him!"<sup>24</sup> When Pilate saw that he was accomplishing nothing, but rather that a riot was starting, he took water and washed his hands in front of the crowd, saying, "I am innocent of this Man's blood; see *to that* yourselves."<sup>25</sup> And all the people said, "His blood shall be on us and on our children!"<sup>26</sup> Then he released Barabbas for them; but after having Jesus scourged, he handed Him over to be crucified. (Matthew 27:15-26 NASB)

**Mk. 15: 6-15**

Now at *the* feast he used to release for them *any* one prisoner whom they requested.<sup>7</sup> The man named Barabbas had been imprisoned with the insurrectionists who had committed murder in the insurrection.<sup>8</sup> The crowd went up and began asking him *to do* as he had been accustomed to do for them.<sup>9</sup> Pilate answered them, saying, "Do you want me to release for you the King of the Jews?"<sup>10</sup> For he was aware that the chief priests had handed Him over because of envy.<sup>11</sup> But the chief priests stirred up the crowd *to ask* him to release Barabbas for them instead.<sup>12</sup> Answering again, Pilate said to them, "Then what shall I do with Him whom you call the King of the Jews?"<sup>13</sup> They shouted back, "Crucify Him!"<sup>14</sup> But Pilate said to them, "Why, what evil has He done?" But they shouted all the more, "Crucify Him!"<sup>15</sup> Wishing to satisfy the crowd, Pilate released Barabbas for them, and after having Jesus scourged, he handed Him over to be crucified. (Mark 15:6-15 NASB)



**Lk. 23: 13-25**

Pilate summoned the chief priests and the rulers and the people,<sup>14</sup> and said to them, "You brought this man to me as one who incites the people to rebellion, and behold, having examined Him before you, I have found no guilt in this man regarding the charges which you make against Him."<sup>15</sup> "No, nor has Herod, for he sent Him back to us; and behold, nothing deserving death has been done by Him."<sup>16</sup> "Therefore I will punish Him and release Him."<sup>17</sup> *Now he was obliged to release to them at the feast one prisoner.*<sup>18</sup> But they cried out all together, saying, "Away with this man, and release for us Barabbas!"<sup>19</sup> (He was one who had been thrown into prison for an insurrection made in the city, and for murder.)<sup>20</sup> Pilate, wanting to release Jesus, addressed them again,<sup>21</sup> but they kept on calling out, saying, "Crucify, crucify Him!"<sup>22</sup> And he said to them the third time, "Why, what evil has this man done? I have found in Him no guilt *demanding* death; therefore I will punish Him and release Him."<sup>23</sup> But they were insistent, with loud voices asking that He be crucified. And their voices *began* to prevail.<sup>24</sup> And Pilate pronounced sentence that their demand be granted.<sup>25</sup> And he released the man they were asking for who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder, but he delivered Jesus to their will. (Luke 23:13-25 NASB)

**CC. Christ Tortured, Mocked, and Handed Over to be Crucified—Matt. 27: 26-31; Mk. 15: 15-20; Lk. 23: 25**

**Matt. 27: 26-31**

Then he released Barabbas for them; but after having Jesus scourged, he handed Him over to be crucified.<sup>27</sup> Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole *Roman* cohort around Him.<sup>28</sup> They stripped Him and put a scarlet robe on Him.<sup>29</sup> And after twisting together a crown of thorns, they put it on His head, and a reed in His right hand; and they knelt down before Him and mocked Him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!"<sup>30</sup> They spat on Him, and took the reed and *began* to beat Him on the head.<sup>31</sup> After they had mocked Him, they took the *scarlet* robe off Him and put His *own* garments back on Him, and led Him away to crucify Him. (Matthew 27:26-31 NASB)

**Mk. 15: 15-20**

Wishing to satisfy the crowd, Pilate released Barabbas for them, and after having Jesus scourged, he handed Him over to be crucified.<sup>16</sup> The soldiers took Him away into the palace (that is, the Praetorium), and they called together the whole *Roman* cohort.<sup>17</sup> They dressed Him up in purple, and after twisting a crown of thorns, they put it on Him;<sup>18</sup> and they began to acclaim Him, "Hail, King of the Jews!"<sup>19</sup> They kept beating His head with a reed, and spitting on Him, and kneeling and bowing before Him.<sup>20</sup> After they had mocked Him, they took the purple robe off Him and put His *own* garments on Him. And they led Him out to crucify Him. (Mark 15:15-20 NASB)

**Lk. 23: 25**

And he released the man they were asking for who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder, but he delivered Jesus to their will. (Luke 23:25 NASB)

**DD. Jesus Condemned by the People after the First Scourging and Mockery—Jn. 19: 6-8**

So when the chief priests and the officers saw Him, they cried out saying, "Crucify, crucify!" Pilate said to them, "Take Him yourselves and crucify Him, for I find no guilt in Him."<sup>7</sup> The Jews answered

him, "We have a law, and by that law He ought to die because He made Himself out *to be* the Son of God."<sup>8</sup> Therefore when Pilate heard this statement, he was *even* more afraid; (John 19:6-8 NASB)

**EE. Pilate's Fear—Jn. 19: 8**

Therefore when Pilate heard this statement, he was *even* more afraid; (John 19:8 NASB)

**FF. Pilate's Admission of Guilt—Jn. 19: 9-10**

and he entered into the Praetorium again and said to Jesus, "Where are You from?" But Jesus gave him no answer.<sup>10</sup> So Pilate said to Him, "You do not speak to me? Do You not know that I have authority to release You, and I have authority to crucify You?" (John 19:9-10 NASB)

**GG. The Sovereign Activity of God—Jn. 19: 11**

Jesus answered, "You would have no authority over Me, unless it had been given you from above; for this reason he who delivered Me to you has *the* greater sin." (John 19:11 NASB)

**HH. Christ Addresses the Women of Jerusalem—Lk. 23: 26-31**

When they led Him away, they seized a man, Simon of Cyrene, coming in from the country, and placed on him the cross to carry behind Jesus.<sup>27</sup> And following Him was a large crowd of the people, and of women who were mourning and lamenting Him.<sup>28</sup> But Jesus turning to them said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, stop weeping for Me, but weep for yourselves and for your children.<sup>29</sup> "For behold, the days are coming when they will say, 'Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bore, and the breasts that never nursed.'<sup>30</sup> "Then they will begin TO SAY TO THE MOUNTAINS, 'FALL ON US,' AND TO THE HILLS, 'COVER US.'<sup>31</sup> "For if they do these things when the tree is green, what will happen when it is dry?" (Luke 23:26-31 NASB)

**II. The Crucifixion of Christ—Matt. 27: 32-56; Mk. 15: 21-41; Lk. 23: 32-49; Jn. 19: 17-37**

**Matt. 27: 32-56**

As they were coming out, they found a man of Cyrene named Simon, whom they pressed into service to bear His cross.<sup>33</sup> And when they came to a place called Golgotha, which means Place of a Skull,<sup>34</sup> they gave Him wine to drink mixed with gall; and after tasting *it*, He was unwilling to drink.<sup>35</sup> And when they had crucified Him, they divided up His garments among themselves by casting lots.<sup>36</sup> And sitting down, they *began* to keep watch over Him there.<sup>37</sup> And above His head they put up the charge against Him which read, "THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS."<sup>38</sup> At that time two robbers were crucified with Him, one on the right and one on the left.<sup>39</sup> And those passing by were hurling abuse at Him, wagging their heads<sup>40</sup> and saying, "You who *are going to* destroy the temple and rebuild it in three days, save Yourself! If You are the Son of God, come down from the cross."<sup>41</sup> In the same way the chief priests also, along with the scribes and elders, were mocking *Him* and saying,<sup>42</sup> "He saved others; He cannot save Himself. He is the King of Israel; let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe in Him."<sup>43</sup> "HE TRUSTS IN GOD; LET GOD RESCUE *Him* now, IF HE DELIGHTS IN HIM; for He said, 'I am the Son of God.'"<sup>44</sup> The robbers who had been crucified with Him were also insulting Him with the same words.<sup>45</sup> Now from the sixth hour darkness fell upon all the land until the ninth hour.<sup>46</sup> About the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, "ELI, ELI, LAMA SABACHTHANI?" that is, "MY GOD, MY GOD, WHY HAVE YOU FORSAKEN ME?"<sup>47</sup> And some of those who were standing there, when they heard it, *began* saying, "This man is calling for Elijah."<sup>48</sup> Immediately one of them ran, and taking a sponge, he filled it with

sour wine and put it on a reed, and gave Him a drink. <sup>49</sup> But the rest *of them* said, "Let us see whether Elijah will come to save Him." <sup>50</sup> And Jesus cried out again with a loud voice, and yielded up His spirit. <sup>51</sup> And behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom; and the earth shook and the rocks were split. <sup>52</sup> The tombs were opened, and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised; <sup>53</sup> and coming out of the tombs after His resurrection they entered the holy city and appeared to many. <sup>54</sup> Now the centurion, and those who were with him keeping guard over Jesus, when they saw the earthquake and the things that were happening, became very frightened and said, "Truly this was the Son of God!" <sup>55</sup> Many women were there looking on from a distance, who had followed Jesus from Galilee while ministering to Him. <sup>56</sup> Among them was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee. (Matthew 27:32-56 NASB)

***Mk. 15: 21-41***

They pressed into service a passer-by coming from the country, Simon of Cyrene (the father of Alexander and Rufus), to bear His cross. <sup>22</sup> Then they brought Him to the place Golgotha, which is translated, Place of a Skull. <sup>23</sup> They tried to give Him wine mixed with myrrh; but He did not take it. <sup>24</sup> And they crucified Him, and divided up His garments among themselves, casting lots for them *to decide* what each man should take. <sup>25</sup> It was the third hour when they crucified Him. <sup>26</sup> The inscription of the charge against Him read, "THE KING OF THE JEWS." <sup>27</sup> They crucified two robbers with Him, one on His right and one on His left. <sup>28</sup> *And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "And He was numbered with transgressors."* <sup>29</sup> Those passing by were hurling abuse at Him, wagging their heads, and saying, "Ha! You who *are going to* destroy the temple and rebuild it in three days, <sup>30</sup> save Yourself, and come down from the cross!" <sup>31</sup> In the same way the chief priests also, along with the scribes, were mocking *Him* among themselves and saying, "He saved others; He cannot save Himself. <sup>32</sup> "Let *this* Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross, so that we may see and believe!" Those who were crucified with Him were also insulting Him. <sup>33</sup> When the sixth hour came, darkness fell over the whole land until the ninth hour. <sup>34</sup> At the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, "ELOI, ELOI, LAMA SABACHTHANI?" which is translated, "MY GOD, MY GOD, WHY HAVE YOU FORSAKEN ME?" <sup>35</sup> When some of the bystanders heard it, they *began* saying, "Behold, He is calling for Elijah." <sup>36</sup> Someone ran and filled a sponge with sour wine, put it on a reed, and gave Him a drink, saying, "Let us see whether Elijah will come to take Him down." <sup>37</sup> And Jesus uttered a loud cry, and breathed His last. <sup>38</sup> And the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. <sup>39</sup> When the centurion, who was standing right in front of Him, saw the way He breathed His last, he said, "Truly this man was the Son of God!" <sup>40</sup> There were also *some* women looking on from a distance, among whom *were* Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the Less and Joses, and Salome. <sup>41</sup> When He was in Galilee, they used to follow Him and minister to Him; and *there were* many other women who came up with Him to Jerusalem. (Mark 15:21-41 NASB)

***Lk. 23: 32-49***

Two others also, who were criminals, were being led away to be put to death with Him. <sup>33</sup> When they came to the place called The Skull, there they crucified Him and the criminals, one on the right and the other on the left. <sup>34</sup> But Jesus was saying, "Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are doing." And they cast lots, dividing up His garments among themselves. <sup>35</sup> And the people stood by, looking on. And even the rulers were sneering at Him, saying, "He saved others; let Him save Himself if this is the Christ of God, His Chosen One." <sup>36</sup> The soldiers also mocked Him, coming up to Him, offering Him sour wine, <sup>37</sup> and saying, "If You are the King of the Jews, save Yourself!" <sup>38</sup> Now

there was also an inscription above Him, "THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS."<sup>39</sup> One of the criminals who were hanged *there* was hurling abuse at Him, saying, "Are You not the Christ? Save Yourself and us!"<sup>40</sup> But the other answered, and rebuking him said, "Do you not even fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation?"<sup>41</sup> "And we indeed *are suffering* justly, for we are receiving what we deserve for our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong."<sup>42</sup> And he was saying, "Jesus, remember me when You come in Your kingdom!"<sup>43</sup> And He said to him, "Truly I say to you, today you shall be with Me in Paradise."<sup>44</sup> It was now about the sixth hour, and darkness fell over the whole land until the ninth hour,<sup>45</sup> because the sun was obscured; and the veil of the temple was torn in two.<sup>46</sup> And Jesus, crying out with a loud voice, said, "Father, INTO YOUR HANDS I COMMIT MY SPIRIT." Having said this, He breathed His last.<sup>47</sup> Now when the centurion saw what had happened, he *began* praising God, saying, "Certainly this man was innocent."<sup>48</sup> And all the crowds who came together for this spectacle, when they observed what had happened, *began* to return, beating their breasts.<sup>49</sup> And all His acquaintances and the women who accompanied Him from Galilee were standing at a distance, seeing these things. (Luke 23:32-49 NASB)

### ***Jn. 19: 17-37***

They took Jesus, therefore, and He went out, bearing His own cross, to the place called the Place of a Skull, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha.<sup>18</sup> There they crucified Him, and with Him two other men, one on either side, and Jesus in between.<sup>19</sup> Pilate also wrote an inscription and put it on the cross. It was written, "JESUS THE NAZARENE, THE KING OF THE JEWS."<sup>20</sup> Therefore many of the Jews read this inscription, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and it was written in Hebrew, Latin *and* in Greek.<sup>21</sup> So the chief priests of the Jews were saying to Pilate, "Do not write, 'The King of the Jews'; but that He said, 'I am King of the Jews.'"<sup>22</sup> Pilate answered, "What I have written I have written."<sup>23</sup> Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took His outer garments and made four parts, a part to every soldier and *also* the tunic; now the tunic was seamless, woven in one piece.<sup>24</sup> So they said to one another, "Let us not tear it, but cast lots for it, *to decide* whose it shall be"; *this was* to fulfill the Scripture: "THEY DIVIDED MY OUTER GARMENTS AMONG THEM, AND FOR MY CLOTHING THEY CAST LOTS."<sup>25</sup> Therefore the soldiers did these things. But standing by the cross of Jesus were His mother, and His mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene.<sup>26</sup> When Jesus then saw His mother, and the disciple whom He loved standing nearby, He said to His mother, "Woman, behold, your son!"<sup>27</sup> Then He said to the disciple, "Behold, your mother!" From that hour the disciple took her into his own *household*.<sup>28</sup> After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had already been accomplished, to fulfill the Scripture, said, "I am thirsty."<sup>29</sup> A jar full of sour wine was standing there; so they put a sponge full of the sour wine upon *a branch of* hyssop and brought it up to His mouth.<sup>30</sup> Therefore when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And He bowed His head and gave up His spirit.<sup>31</sup> Then the Jews, because it was the day of preparation, so that the bodies would not remain on the cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a high day), asked Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.<sup>32</sup> So the soldiers came, and broke the legs of the first man and of the other who was crucified with Him;<sup>33</sup> but coming to Jesus, when they saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs.<sup>34</sup> But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.<sup>35</sup> And he who has seen has testified, and his testimony is true; and he knows that he is telling the truth, so that you also may believe.<sup>36</sup> For these things came to pass to fulfill the Scripture, "NOT A BONE OF HIM SHALL BE BROKEN."<sup>37</sup> And again another Scripture says, "THEY SHALL LOOK ON HIM WHOM THEY PIERCED." (John 19:17-37 NASB)

***KK. Events Immediately after Jesus' Death—Matt. 27: 52-56; Mk. 15: 38-41; Lk. 23: 47-49***

***Matt. 27: 52-56***

The tombs were opened, and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised;<sup>53</sup> and coming out of the tombs after His resurrection they entered the holy city and appeared to many.<sup>54</sup> Now the centurion, and those who were with him keeping guard over Jesus, when they saw the earthquake and the things that were happening, became very frightened and said, "Truly this was the Son of God!"<sup>55</sup> Many women were there looking on from a distance, who had followed Jesus from Galilee while ministering to Him.<sup>56</sup> Among them was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee. (Matthew 27:52-56 NASB)

***Mk. 15: 38-41***

And the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom.<sup>39</sup> When the centurion, who was standing right in front of Him, saw the way He breathed His last, he said, "Truly this man was the Son of God!"<sup>40</sup> There were also *some* women looking on from a distance, among whom *were* Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the Less and Joses, and Salome.<sup>41</sup> When He was in Galilee, they used to follow Him and minister to Him; and *there were* many other women who came up with Him to Jerusalem. (Mark 15:38-41 NASB)

***Lk. 23: 47-49***

Now when the centurion saw what had happened, he *began* praising God, saying, "Certainly this man was innocent."<sup>48</sup> And all the crowds who came together for this spectacle, when they observed what had happened, *began* to return, beating their breasts.<sup>49</sup> And all His acquaintances and the women who accompanied Him from Galilee were standing at a distance, seeing these things. (Luke 23:47-49 NASB)

***LL. The Examination of Christ's Body before Removal from the Cross—Jn. 19: 31-42***

Then the Jews, because it was the day of preparation, so that the bodies would not remain on the cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a high day), asked Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.<sup>32</sup> So the soldiers came, and broke the legs of the first man and of the other who was crucified with Him;<sup>33</sup> but coming to Jesus, when they saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs.<sup>34</sup> But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.<sup>35</sup> And he who has seen has testified, and his testimony is true; and he knows that he is telling the truth, so that you also may believe.<sup>36</sup> For these things came to pass to fulfill the Scripture, "NOT A BONE OF HIM SHALL BE BROKEN."<sup>37</sup> And again another Scripture says, "THEY SHALL LOOK ON HIM WHOM THEY PIERCED."<sup>38</sup> After these things Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but a secret *one* for fear of the Jews, asked Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus; and Pilate granted permission. So he came and took away His body.<sup>39</sup> Nicodemus, who had first come to Him by night, also came, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds *weight*.<sup>40</sup> So they took the body of Jesus and bound it in linen wrappings with the spices, as is the burial custom of the Jews.<sup>41</sup> Now in the place where He was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb in which no one had yet been laid.<sup>42</sup> Therefore because of the Jewish day of preparation, since the tomb was nearby, they laid Jesus there. (John 19:31-42 NASB)

**MM. The Burial of Christ—Matt. 27: 57-61; Mk.14: 42-47; Lk. 23: 50-56; Jn. 19: 38-42**

**Matt. 27: 57-61**

When it was evening, there came a rich man from Arimathea, named Joseph, who himself had also become a disciple of Jesus.<sup>58</sup> This man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate ordered it to be given *to him*.<sup>59</sup> And Joseph took the body and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,<sup>60</sup> and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock; and he rolled a large stone against the entrance of the tomb and went away.<sup>61</sup> And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting opposite the grave. (Matthew 27:57-61 NASB)

**Mk.15: 42-47**

When evening had already come, because it was the preparation day, that is, the day before the Sabbath,<sup>43</sup> Joseph of Arimathea came, a prominent member of the Council, who himself was waiting for the kingdom of God; and he gathered up courage and went in before Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.<sup>44</sup> Pilate wondered if He was dead by this time, and summoning the centurion, he questioned him as to whether He was already dead.<sup>45</sup> And ascertaining this from the centurion, he granted the body to Joseph.<sup>46</sup> Joseph bought a linen cloth, took Him down, wrapped Him in the linen cloth and laid Him in a tomb which had been hewn out in the rock; and he rolled a stone against the entrance of the tomb.<sup>47</sup> Mary Magdalene and Mary the *mother* of Joses were looking on *to see* where He was laid. (Mark 15:42-47 NASB)

**Lk. 23: 50-56**

And a man named Joseph, who was a member of the Council, a good and righteous man<sup>51</sup> (he had not consented to their plan and action), *a man* from Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who was waiting for the kingdom of God;<sup>52</sup> this man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus.<sup>53</sup> And he took it down and wrapped it in a linen cloth, and laid Him in a tomb cut into the rock, where no one had ever lain.<sup>54</sup> It was the preparation day, and the Sabbath was about to begin.<sup>55</sup> Now the women who had come with Him out of Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how His body was laid.<sup>56</sup> Then they returned and prepared spices and perfumes. And on the Sabbath they rested according to the commandment. (Luke 23:50-56 NASB)

**Jn. 19: 38-42**

After these things Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but a secret *one* for fear of the Jews, asked Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus; and Pilate granted permission. So he came and took away His body.<sup>39</sup> Nicodemus, who had first come to Him by night, also came, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds *weight*.<sup>40</sup> So they took the body of Jesus and bound it in linen wrappings with the spices, as is the burial custom of the Jews.<sup>41</sup> Now in the place where He was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb in which no one had yet been laid.<sup>42</sup> Therefore because of the Jewish day of preparation, since the tomb was nearby, they laid Jesus there. (John 19:38-42 NASB)

**2. The sealing of the tomb—Matt. 27: 62-66; 28: 11-15**

**Matt. 27: 62-66**

Now on the next day, the day after the preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered together with Pilate,<sup>63</sup> and said, "Sir, we remember that when He was still alive that deceiver said,

'After three days I *am to* rise again.'<sup>64</sup> "Therefore, give orders for the grave to be made secure until the third day, otherwise His disciples may come and steal Him away and say to the people, 'He has risen from the dead,' and the last deception will be worse than the first."<sup>65</sup> Pilate said to them, "You have a guard; go, make it *as* secure as you know how."<sup>66</sup> And they went and made the grave secure, and along with the guard they set a seal on the stone. (Matthew 27:62-66 NASB)

***Matt. 28: 11-15***

Now while they were on their way, some of the guard came into the city and reported to the chief priests all that had happened.<sup>12</sup> And when they had assembled with the elders and consulted together, they gave a large sum of money to the soldiers,<sup>13</sup> and said, "You are to say, 'His disciples came by night and stole Him away while we were asleep.'<sup>14</sup> "And if this should come to the governor's ears, we will win him over and keep you out of trouble."<sup>15</sup> And they took the money and did as they had been instructed; and this story was widely spread among the Jews, *and is* to this day. (Matthew 28:11-15 NASB)

***NN. The Resurrection Day Appearances of Christ—Matt. 28: 1-10, 16-20; Mk. 16: 1-8; Lk. 24: 1-49; Jn. 20: 1-25; 21: 1-25***

***Matt. 28: 1-10, 16-20***

Now after the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to look at the grave.<sup>2</sup> And behold, a severe earthquake had occurred, for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven and came and rolled away the stone and sat upon it.<sup>3</sup> And his appearance was like lightning, and his clothing as white as snow.<sup>4</sup> The guards shook for fear of him and became like dead men.<sup>5</sup> The angel said to the women, "Do not be afraid; for I know that you are looking for Jesus who has been crucified."<sup>6</sup> "He is not here, for He has risen, just as He said. Come, see the place where He was lying."<sup>7</sup> "Go quickly and tell His disciples that He has risen from the dead; and behold, He is going ahead of you into Galilee, there you will see Him; behold, I have told you."<sup>8</sup> And they left the tomb quickly with fear and great joy and ran to report it to His disciples.<sup>9</sup> And behold, Jesus met them and greeted them. And they came up and took hold of His feet and worshiped Him.<sup>10</sup> Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid; go and take word to My brethren to leave for Galilee, and there they will see Me." (Matthew 28:1-10 NASB)

But the eleven disciples proceeded to Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had designated.<sup>17</sup> When they saw Him, they worshiped *Him*; but some were doubtful.<sup>18</sup> And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth."<sup>19</sup> "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit,<sup>20</sup> teaching them to observe all that I commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." (Matthew 28:16-20 NASB)

***Mk. 16: 1-8***

When the Sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, bought spices, so that they might come and anoint Him.<sup>2</sup> Very early on the first day of the week, they came to the tomb when the sun had risen.<sup>3</sup> They were saying to one another, "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the tomb?"<sup>4</sup> Looking up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away, although it was extremely large.<sup>5</sup> Entering the tomb, they saw a young man sitting at the right, wearing a white robe; and they were amazed.<sup>6</sup> And he said to them, "Do not be amazed; you are looking for Jesus the Nazarene, who has been crucified. He has risen; He is not here; behold, *here is*

the place where they laid Him.<sup>7</sup> "But go, tell His disciples and Peter, 'He is going ahead of you to Galilee; there you will see Him, just as He told you.'"<sup>8</sup> They went out and fled from the tomb, for trembling and astonishment had gripped them; and they said nothing to anyone, for they were afraid. (Mark 16:1-8 NASB)

**Lk. 24: 1-49**

But on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they came to the tomb bringing the spices which they had prepared.<sup>2</sup> And they found the stone rolled away from the tomb,<sup>3</sup> but when they entered, they did not find the body of the Lord Jesus.<sup>4</sup> While they were perplexed about this, behold, two men suddenly stood near them in dazzling clothing;<sup>5</sup> and as *the women* were terrified and bowed their faces to the ground, *the men* said to them, "Why do you seek the living One among the dead?"<sup>6</sup> "He is not here, but He has risen. Remember how He spoke to you while He was still in Galilee,<sup>7</sup> saying that the Son of Man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again."<sup>8</sup> And they remembered His words,<sup>9</sup> and returned from the tomb and reported all these things to the eleven and to all the rest.<sup>10</sup> Now they were Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary the *mother* of James; also the other women with them were telling these things to the apostles.<sup>11</sup> But these words appeared to them as nonsense, and they would not believe them.<sup>12</sup> But Peter got up and ran to the tomb; stooping and looking in, he saw the linen wrappings only; and he went away to his home, marveling at what had happened.<sup>13</sup> And behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was about seven miles from Jerusalem.<sup>14</sup> And they were talking with each other about all these things which had taken place.<sup>15</sup> While they were talking and discussing, Jesus Himself approached and *began* traveling with them.<sup>16</sup> But their eyes were prevented from recognizing Him.<sup>17</sup> And He said to them, "What are these words that you are exchanging with one another as you are walking?" And they stood still, looking sad.<sup>18</sup> One *of them*, named Cleopas, answered and said to Him, "Are You the only one visiting Jerusalem and unaware of the things which have happened here in these days?"<sup>19</sup> And He said to them, "What things?" And they said to Him, "The things about Jesus the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word in the sight of God and all the people,<sup>20</sup> and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered Him to the sentence of death, and crucified Him.<sup>21</sup> "But we were hoping that it was He who was going to redeem Israel. Indeed, besides all this, it is the third day since these things happened.<sup>22</sup> "But also some women among us amazed us. When they were at the tomb early in the morning,<sup>23</sup> and did not find His body, they came, saying that they had also seen a vision of angels who said that He was alive.<sup>24</sup> "Some of those who were with us went to the tomb and found it just exactly as the women also had said; but Him they did not see."<sup>25</sup> And He said to them, "O foolish men and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken!<sup>26</sup> "Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things and to enter into His glory?"<sup>27</sup> Then beginning with Moses and with all the prophets, He explained to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures.<sup>28</sup> And they approached the village where they were going, and He acted as though He were going farther.<sup>29</sup> But they urged Him, saying, "Stay with us, for it is *getting* toward evening, and the day is now nearly over." So He went in to stay with them.<sup>30</sup> When He had reclined *at the table* with them, He took the bread and blessed *it*, and breaking *it*, He *began* giving *it* to them.<sup>31</sup> Then their eyes were opened and they recognized Him; and He vanished from their sight.<sup>32</sup> They said to one another, "Were not our hearts burning within us while He was speaking to us on the road, while He was explaining the Scriptures to us?"<sup>33</sup> And they got up that very hour and returned to Jerusalem, and found gathered together the eleven and those who were with them,<sup>34</sup> saying, "The Lord has really risen and has appeared to Simon."<sup>35</sup> They *began* to relate their experiences on the road and how He was recognized by them in the breaking of the bread.<sup>36</sup> While



they were telling these things, He Himself stood in their midst and said to them, "Peace be to you."<sup>37</sup> But they were startled and frightened and thought that they were seeing a spirit.<sup>38</sup> And He said to them, "Why are you troubled, and why do doubts arise in your hearts?"<sup>39</sup> "See My hands and My feet, that it is I Myself; touch Me and see, for a spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see that I have."<sup>40</sup> And when He had said this, He showed them His hands and His feet.<sup>41</sup> While they still could not believe *it* because of their joy and amazement, He said to them, "Have you anything here to eat?"<sup>42</sup> They gave Him a piece of a broiled fish;<sup>43</sup> and He took it and ate *it* before them.<sup>44</sup> Now He said to them, "These are My words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things which are written about Me in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms must be fulfilled."<sup>45</sup> Then He opened their minds to understand the Scriptures,<sup>46</sup> and He said to them, "Thus it is written, that the Christ would suffer and rise again from the dead the third day,<sup>47</sup> and that repentance for forgiveness of sins would be proclaimed in His name to all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem.<sup>48</sup> "You are witnesses of these things.<sup>49</sup> "And behold, I am sending forth the promise of My Father upon you; but you are to stay in the city until you are clothed with power from on high." (Luke 24:1-49 NASB)

### ***Jn. 20: 1-25***

Now on the first *day* of the week Mary Magdalene came early to the tomb, while it was still dark, and saw the stone *already* taken away from the tomb.<sup>2</sup> So she ran and came to Simon Peter and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and said to them, "They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid Him."<sup>3</sup> So Peter and the other disciple went forth, and they were going to the tomb.<sup>4</sup> The two were running together; and the other disciple ran ahead faster than Peter and came to the tomb first;<sup>5</sup> and stooping and looking in, he saw the linen wrappings lying *there*; but he did not go in.<sup>6</sup> And so Simon Peter also came, following him, and entered the tomb; and he saw the linen wrappings lying *there*,<sup>7</sup> and the face-cloth which had been on His head, not lying with the linen wrappings, but rolled up in a place by itself.<sup>8</sup> So the other disciple who had first come to the tomb then also entered, and he saw and believed.<sup>9</sup> For as yet they did not understand the Scripture, that He must rise again from the dead.<sup>10</sup> So the disciples went away again to their own homes.<sup>11</sup> But Mary was standing outside the tomb weeping; and so, as she wept, she stooped and looked into the tomb;<sup>12</sup> and she saw two angels in white sitting, one at the head and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus had been lying.<sup>13</sup> And they said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping?" She said to them, "Because they have taken away my Lord, and I do not know where they have laid Him."<sup>14</sup> When she had said this, she turned around and saw Jesus standing *there*, and did not know that it was Jesus.<sup>15</sup> Jesus said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?" Supposing Him to be the gardener, she said to Him, "Sir, if you have carried Him away, tell me where you have laid Him, and I will take Him away."<sup>16</sup> Jesus said to her, "Mary!" She turned and said to Him in Hebrew, "Rabboni!" (which means, Teacher).<sup>17</sup> Jesus said to her, "Stop clinging to Me, for I have not yet ascended to the Father; but go to My brethren and say to them, 'I ascend to My Father and your Father, and My God and your God.'"<sup>18</sup> Mary Magdalene came, announcing to the disciples, "I have seen the Lord," and *that* He had said these things to her.<sup>19</sup> So when it was evening on that day, the first *day* of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in their midst and said to them, "Peace *be* with you."<sup>20</sup> And when He had said this, He showed them both His hands and His side. The disciples then rejoiced when they saw the Lord.<sup>21</sup> So Jesus said to them again, "Peace *be* with you; as the Father has sent Me, I also send you."<sup>22</sup> And when He had said this, He breathed on them and said to them, "Receive the Holy Spirit.<sup>23</sup> "If you forgive the sins of any, *their sins* have been forgiven them; if you retain the *sins* of any, they have been retained."<sup>24</sup> But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.<sup>25</sup> So the other disciples were saying to him, "We have seen the Lord!" But he said

to them, "Unless I see in His hands the imprint of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe." (John 20:1-25 NASB)

**John 21: 1-25**

After these things Jesus manifested Himself again to the disciples at the Sea of Tiberias, and He manifested *Himself* in this way.<sup>2</sup> Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two others of His disciples were together.<sup>3</sup> Simon Peter said to them, "I am going fishing." They said to him, "We will also come with you." They went out and got into the boat; and that night they caught nothing.<sup>4</sup> But when the day was now breaking, Jesus stood on the beach; yet the disciples did not know that it was Jesus.<sup>5</sup> So Jesus said to them, "Children, you do not have any fish, do you?" They answered Him, "No."<sup>6</sup> And He said to them, "Cast the net on the right-hand side of the boat and you will find *a catch*." So they cast, and then they were not able to haul it in because of the great number of fish.<sup>7</sup> Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It is the Lord." So when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he put his outer garment on (for he was stripped *for work*), and threw himself into the sea.<sup>8</sup> But the other disciples came in the little boat, for they were not far from the land, but about one hundred yards away, dragging the net *full* of fish.<sup>9</sup> So when they got out on the land, they saw a charcoal fire *already* laid and fish placed on it, and bread.<sup>10</sup> Jesus said to them, "Bring some of the fish which you have now caught."<sup>11</sup> Simon Peter went up and drew the net to land, full of large fish, a hundred and fifty-three; and although there were so many, the net was not torn.<sup>12</sup> Jesus said to them, "Come *and* have breakfast." None of the disciples ventured to question Him, "Who are You?" knowing that it was the Lord.<sup>13</sup> Jesus came and took the bread and gave *it* to them, and the fish likewise.<sup>14</sup> This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after He was raised from the dead.<sup>15</sup> So when they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Tend My lambs."<sup>16</sup> He said to him again a second time, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love Me?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Shepherd My sheep."<sup>17</sup> He said to him the third time, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love Me?" And he said to Him, "Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You." Jesus said to him, "Tend My sheep."<sup>18</sup> "Truly, truly, I say to you, when you were younger, you used to gird yourself and walk wherever you wished; but when you grow old, you will stretch out your hands and someone else will gird you, and bring you where you do not wish to *go*."<sup>19</sup> Now this He said, signifying by what kind of death he would glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He said to him, "Follow Me!"<sup>20</sup> Peter, turning around, saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following *them*; the one who also had leaned back on His bosom at the supper and said, "Lord, who is the one who betrays You?"<sup>21</sup> So Peter seeing him said to Jesus, "Lord, and what about this man?"<sup>22</sup> Jesus said to him, "If I want him to remain until I come, what *is that* to you? You follow Me!"<sup>23</sup> Therefore this saying went out among the brethren that that disciple would not die; yet Jesus did not say to him that he would not die, but *only*, "If I want him to remain until I come, what *is that* to you?"<sup>24</sup> This is the disciple who is testifying to these things and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.<sup>25</sup> And there are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they were written in detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not contain the books that would be written. (John 21:1-25 NASB)